ADVENTURES

OF

Capt. Greenland.

WRITTEN

In Imitation of all those WISE, LEARNED, WITTY and HUMOROUS AUTHORS, who either already have, or hereafter may Write in the same Stile and Manner.

The Brain I'll prove the Female to my Soul!

My Soul the Father; and these two beget

A Generation of still Breeding Thoughts,

And these same Thoughts people this little World,

In Humours like the People of This World.

SHAKESPEAR.

VOL. III.

LONDON:

Printed for R. BALDWIN, at the Rose in Pater-Noster-Row.

M.DCC.LII.

HARVARD COLLEGE LIBRARY
THE GIFT OF)
FRIENDS OF THE LIBRARY
FRIENDS OF THE LIBRARY

interest in a street that the established

Burstyon and Double Service Mark

TIMEVOL

HOMESTER STATE OF THE



THE

CONTENTS

OF THE

THIRD VOLUME.

BOOK VII.

CHAP. I.

HEREIN are Discovered some Prefatory Despondings of the Author's, lest the Public, or the Booksellers should not sufficiently reward his Labours in this Work. With some Marks of his Natural Temper. Page 1

CHAP. II.

Wherein Mr. Simpson continues his agreeable History of Louisa, &c. 7

A 2 CHAP.

CHAP. III.

The Conclusion of the above Story, and some Remarks thereon, by Silvius: With his Return to England, and who he first met there. p. 14

CHAP. IV.

Silvius is fent for by his young Lady, who receives him with great Curtefy. And fends him immediately to London on particular Bufiness. For which and past Services, she very sufficiently rewards him.

CHAP. V.

Chiefly confisting of Letters; and some other Proceedings.

CHAP. VI.

While Silvius is absent in Quest of Angelica, a very unexpected Turn happens in the Affairs of his Lady Rosetta; which contributes much to the Credit and Advantage of our Hero Silvius.

CHAP. VII.

Silvius returns, and gives his Lady and the Captain a fruitless Account of his last Sally.

With the History of a very remarkable Exploit.

48

CHAR

BOOK VIII.

CHAP. I.

Containing the courteous and human Behaviour of these Strange People towards the Captain.

Page 114

CHAP II.

How the Captain's kind Friend behaved towards him, for several Days after; and how they pass'd their Time together. With some other Historical-Matter. 121

CHAP. III.

Containing the Captain's Reasons for not Recording the exact Situation of this famous Island; its Name, and that of his present good Friend; and farther Marks of his judicious Generostty.

CHAP. IV.

Captain Greenland is carried to the Metropolis of Puppet Island; and introduced to a certain Great Man, in Quality of a British Prince, and afterwards to Court: With an Account how he was there received.

CHAP

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

The above Proposal improved: And a voluntary Subscription raised by the Ladies for three Years to support the British Prince, in case he should not, in that Space, be better provided for.

p. 143

CHAP. VI.

Containing an Introduction to the History of Puppet-Island.

CHAP. VII.

Containing a Brief and Historical Account of fome few necessary Points. 153:

CHAP. VIII.

Of the Constitutional Laws of the Island of Puppets.

CHAP. IX.

Religions of the Religion, or rather the Religions of the Puppets: viz. The Peterians and Antipeterians. Especially of the whimsical Destrine of the Latter.

CHAP. X.

Containing a Rhapsedy of Puppet Customs, Superstitions, &c. &c. p. 171:

CHAP.

* CHAP. VU.

Wherein Captain Oldnall delivers to Rosetta a brief Account of himself and Family; and how he came to enter the Merchants Service. A very interesting Proposition is made to Silvius: Which by him is very thankfully approved, and accepted of.

p. 62

CHAP. VIII.

Captain Watson and Silvius proceed in their Voyage; with some Account of what afterwards happened to them.

CHAP. IX.

The Storm continues, whereby the Ship is in such eminent Danger, that the Captain determines to quit her; and to that End, devises a very remarkable Machine to preserve his own. Life.

CHAP. X.

Containing the Captain's most perilous and tremendous Situation; and what divine Restections he made choice of to comfort him self. 85

This should have been Chap. viii. but was an Over-fight not discover'd till it was work'd off.

CHAP. XI.

Containing the Captain's first six Days Voyage in his Wicker Bark. p 90

CHAP. XII.

Containing many very material and sublime Contemplations and Restlections, in the Mind of Captain Greenland; and his fearful Apprehensions at the Sight of that surprising Phænomenon, called a Water-Spout. 96

CHAP. XIII.

What Amusements the Captain devised after the Disappearance of the Water-Spout. 102

CHAP. XIV.

The Captain is reduced, both in his Personal Spirits and his Provisions, to the last Extremity; yet, Providence and Nature both join their Assistance to compleat his Preservation and Safety.

BOOK

CHAP. XI.

Containing the History of a very astonishing Masquerade; and the Cause thereof. p. 177

CHAP. XII.

Of the Puppets Dramatick-Entertainments, Poets and Players. 181

CHAP. XIII.

A further Account of the ill-Treatment of Poets, and a particular, Instance of which I was myself a Witness. 190

CHAP. XIV.

Containing a further Account of the Taste and Humour of the Puppet-Ladies, and of a very sudden and a melancholy Accident to one of my generous Subscribers, &c. 198

CHAP. XV.

The inward Portrait of Mr. Mac-o-brass, delineated by bimfelf, in a remarkable Apology for his obdurate Life; with the Grounds of his continual Views, and his particular Opinion of the most material Points, explain'd in the Addition of his Creed, annex'd to it

BOOK IX.

CHAP. I.

Which may serve for a Preface to this Book.
Page 214

CHAP. II.

A great National Bully not Master of his own House: Being an Instance of the Despotic Power of a Puppet-Wise. And translated here, with an Intent to gladden the Hearts of all English Husbands by the Comparison of this Chapter with their own happy State. 219

CHAP. III.

The Conclusion of the present Tale; which ends very much to the Honour and Interest of the renown'd Mrs. Polecat. 227

CHAP. IV.

Containing fome reasonable Conjectures of the Author's concerning the foregoing Story; and some other far-fetch'd Comments, which the Reader may construe as he pleases. 233

CHAP. V.

Wherein the Captain introduces the Second Story, according to Promise. 236

OOS

CHAP

CHAP. VI.

How Mr. Calmly's Wife gave him a dangerous Wound on his Forehead; and the Manner he accounted with her for it, afterwards. 241

CHAP. VII.

A Kind of digressional Glossary.

Ċ.

4

2

ic

d

f

9

7

e

1

3

251

CHAP. VIII.

The Captain is alarmed with a Suspicion of Thieves in his own House. 256

CHAP. IX.

Shewing what whimsical Device the Captain put in Practice to prevent his House being robbed, &c. 261

CHAP. X.

Wherein the Reader will see the successful Consequences of the foregoing Project: And may, if he pleases, find something to improve his own Genius.

CHAP. XI.

Containing a remarkable Instance of our Hero's Humanity, and which produced him a very serviceable Acquaintance for the future.

275

CHAP.

CHAP. XII.

Wherein is related the meral and entertaining History of the Ingenious Yawho Zenobrady p. 282

CHAP. XIII.

Wherein the Yawho concludes his History, and how he was employ'd by the Captain. 288

CHAP. XIV.

Reing a long and Occasional Digression; but a very short Chapter. And the last of this Volume.

general of the Program, Poplar : Leed may.

Coptaining a returnful is hydnose of can II, role
Affiliationing, and robots freducia him a very

"The lights discussioned for the fallers."

line provint his Majo, Line

in scoremi ci

CHAP

H.T.

CHAP

THE

ADVENTURES

OF

8

is

Capt. GREENLAND.

BOOK VII.

CHAP. I.

Wherein are Discover'd some Prefatory Despondings of the Author's, lest the Public, or the Booksellers should not sufficiently reward his Labours in this Work. With some Marks of his Natural Temper.

FTER all the Care, Pains, and Endeavours we have laboured with, to entertain the Publick with this adventurous and much edifying Work, we cannot but be under some Doubts lest they Vol. III. B should

should render our Lucubrations not sufficiently rewarded: For when we call to Mind the miserable and griping Greediness of the Generality of Booksellers; both in their Purchasing our Copies, and Publishing of our Works for us, it somewhat frets our Spleen to reflect that, after we have, with great Labour, created Kingdoms and States; erected Piles and Thrones; called Tyrants to Account; and fill'd the whole World with Matters they never dream'd of before; that we should at last ourselves be miserably punish'd by the narrow - soul'd Gripings and Pinches of a paltry Muck-Worm !- The ungrateful Thought of which is enough to burst the toughest Heartstring that ever withstood the Desires of-better Fortune. These Booksellers, who purchase Copies of us, their indefatigable Slaves, are upon the fame Footing, by their Manner of dealing, with a Master Watch-Maker, or Finisher (as they are term'd) who by putting the last stroke to the Bufiness (which is only keeping an Openshop for the Disposing of other Men's Labours) do run away with both Credit and Profit together; if any should arise thereby; and which they do always put a Price upon themselves, (seldom according to the real Value, but generally according to the Custom of Trade, and the Measure of their own Consciences.) And, but

II.

tly

he

ra-

ng

ter

ms

ed

ole

of

be

'd

k-

is

at

r-

cs

he

th

ey

0

n-

s)

0-

ch

S

e-

nd

d,

ut

but that our present Composition must absolutely pass through the fiery Trials of those Discerning Gentlemen, for Approbation and Sale; we should here certainly be somewhat Sarcastical upon their whole Body-Politic: But having so interested a View before us, we shall consequently be the more cautions how we speak our Minds of a Set of People who have it so much in their Power to deplume our soaring Wings.

This prevalent Confideration inflantly flops our Mouth, when we should otherwise point out the particular Penury of many of those griping Worldlings. And, for Example, we might Pitch upon the great Mr. Guy; who, though he could not spare a Six-pence to affift a Poor perishing fellow Creature (as Fame reports) in his Life-time; amass'd such a prodigious Fortune, by screwing from others, and by being sparing in himself, that few have left the like in this Kingdom. And after this mighty and most industrious Accumulation. finding that he should not be able to turn it to any Improvement in the Grave; he wifely thought proper to convert his vast Wealth into an Hospital; in order to attone for his former Penury, by a most affluent Provision for Perfons afflicted with fome of those Maladies, which his Gripings had frequently occasion'd, B 2 And

And all the Satisfaction and Comfort that a poor Author has to reflect on, after being pinch'd out of his Labours by this Penurian, even to a down-right State of starving; is, that his wretched Ingenuity and hard Study had starved himself, to help-towards building an Hospital for the Affistance of others: And where his Children, and their Successors, may hereafter reap the Benefit, by only breaking a Leg or an Arm, &c. to furnish forth the Surgeons thereof with an Opportunity of exercifing their hum'rous and wanton Experiments.

It is faid, that when that great Man, Sir Walter Raleigh, had written his History of the World (as we have feen it publish'd) and being yet a Prisoner in the Tower, and a Man of a most busy and active Spirit; he thought he could not better employ his unhappy Time for Public-Utility, than by obliging the World with a fecond Part; wherein, it is also said, that he had been more profitable than in his first. But sending for the Bookseller who had publish'd the Former-Part, he acquainted him of this fecond Performance; who shaking his Ears, instead of pricking them up, at those good Tidings, told Sir Walter, that he fear'd it would never answer: That he had lost Money by publishing his first History; and that the World had indeed (though he verily believ'd without

BUUK

II.

or h'd

o a his

ed

tal

nis

er

or

ns

eir

ir

ne

e-

m

nt

e

d

1,

is

d

n

S

d

t

y

1

without Cause) spoke very slightingly of it.

This scandalous Assertion so irritated the good Old Gentleman (who knew the Value of his Works much better than this Learned Wight) and finding his worthy Labours and Intentions thus aspersed and insulted, he made no more Words, but Committing the whole Manuscript instantly to the Flames, told the Bookseller, "That since the World had so ungratefully rewarded his laborious Endeavours by their Abuse of his former History, they should never have it in their Power to do the like by the latter." And so suffer'd the whole Copy to consume to Ashes before the Bookseller's Face.

This unexpected bactimes to amazes and wrought upon this over cunning Politician, that he was immediately ready to hang hlmfelf. And indeed, as I have heard many People fay, it was a Death, which for his Ignorance and Impudence, they thought he very richly deferved.

We also Read, in the Life of the great and immortal John Milton, that his Manuscript of Paradise Lost, was so slighted by that wise and most discerning Fraternity, that after it was kickt and thrown about for some Time, as a Triffle of little or no Value; it was at last

. B 3

fold to some more penetrating, or fortunate Man, for the immense Sum of fifteen Pounds! And for the Study of which the Learned and abused Author honestly deserved the Reward of as many Thousands.

When we reflect on those mournful and most shameful Examples, and of the Risk we run, of being perhaps used much worse; the Symptoms of Despair begin to arise and shake our Soul with horrid Apprehensions. Infomuch that we find our Historical and Biographical Genius almost ready to bid us farewell; and leave us in the very Plunge of all our Hopes, Expectations and Endeavours. And indeed we have but one only Prospect that is powerful enough to keep this whimfical Gentlewoman in our Company any further, and which is fupported by an absolute Resolution that if we cannot perfuade fome worthy Bookfeller to purchase the Copy at a Price that will at least pay for our Small-beer and Firing, during our Time of Composing it, we will either print it at our own Expence, or otherwise serve it, as Sir Walter has shewn us, as above.

If.

late

ind

ard

nd

ve

he

ce

h

1

d

,

e

1

1

S

CHAP. II.

Wherein Mr. Simpson continues bis agreeable History of Louisa, &c.

UR Hero being very impatient for the Conclusion of the History of the fair Louisa, faid to his Friend-Well, Sir! Now they are gotten fafe out of the Portugueze Reach, I want to know how they were received at Home-Why, I can affure you, Sir, continued Mr. Simpson, to Silvius, that there was a monftrous Clutter about it next Morning ; for Miss Louisa being miss'd at Mattins, and not feen of any body; and having been also for some time before extreamly ill, they repair'd to her Apartment, with some Dread that the had given them the flip by another Mean; that is to fay, by Means of the last Guide from all mortal Confinement. But upon further Search, they discover'd that she had found Means of escaping through the Garden, and over a great Wall, upwards of Twenty Feet high. fad Enfign of which was yet remaining to be feen without the Garden; and still depending from the Wall-Top, viz. the Ladder of Ropes with which the Captain first ascended; and which, by Means of a leaden Weight which B 4

which was fastened to it, and cast over the Wall, to counterballance the Scaling, they could not readily disengage it: And therefore, as it had effectually answer'd the good End design'd, and having no farther Use for it, they list it there for the suture Service of the Convent.

Upon this Discovery, there was, according to Custom, whenever it happens that any body breaks loose from the Tyranny of the Ecclesiastic Power) an immediate Embargo and general Search on all Shipping, as well as the most severe Scrutiny every other way, throughout the whole Kingdom.

But Louisa being now safely and happily arrived at Portsmouth, the Captain immediately dispatched a Messager to acquaint the Old Gentleman her Father, of his safe Arrival from Portugal; and that he should come to pay his Duties to him the next Day. And having now hired a Coach and Six (for Post-Chaises were not then in Use) the very next Morning they set out early for London; and by changing their Horses at Guilford, they got safe to Town, by about Six o'Clock the same Evening.

When they came to their Father's Door, as it was before confulted, Louisa put on a Mask, that he might be the very first Person in the Family that should see her Face: And for which

the they fore. dehey Con-

VII.

ling ody efineoft out

ly ld m is W

ar-

e. 2 r

which unexpected Happiness the Captain was first to prepare him. For by the Dispatch of the Messenger who arrived there the Night before, from the Captain, the poor Old Gentleman had been in a continual Impatience; but in the utmost Spirits, all that Day, to fee him: But now, to his unspeakable Joy, he heard the Coach stop at the Door; and enquiring instantly, whether it was his Son, (as he had always call'd him fince his Adoption) he was answer'd to his Wish. But the Captain hearing of his Impatience, begg'd of Louisa to stay mask'd in the Coach, till he returned to introduce her. Which she readily consented to: And now the Captain was making the best of his Speed to render his Duty to his eager Father, when he met him half way down stairs, coming to meet him; where he was almost ready to devour him with his impatient Love and Transport. ing out in the utmost Exstasy, My dearest Boy! My best loved! worthiest Lad! And art thou come again, at last? Oh! thou art welcome! welcome to thy impatient, and enraptured Father's Arms! But tell me, my dear Child! didst thou see my poor Louisa? And did she enquire after her cruel and hard-hearted Father? Oh! my poor loft Girl !- There, the tenderhearted Father's Raptures instantly changed to a fudden Flow of Tears. And all this paffing

B 5

but upon the Stairs (for the old Gentleman had not Power, as yet, to return up again) and the Street-door being wide open, on Account of the Lady whom the Servant faw left in the Coach; poor Louisa was, with the utmost Effect an Ear-witness of every Word that past. But after some little Time allow'd him to recover himfelf, the Captain return'd, --- Your Daughter, Sir, is well; and if you'll please to walk up flairs into the Dining-Room, I'll shew you all my News in a very few Words. And which he did, as thus :- Sir, I had a very fine Passage to Portugal; I visited Louisa several Times; she's in perfect good Health, prays continually for your Health and Peace of Mind, and fends her humblest Duty to you. But now, Sir, with your Leave, continued the Captain, I may perhaps a little furprize you; for you must understand, Sir, that I accidentally fell into Company with a young Lady at Portsmouth, who I could not but imagine was excessively like your dear and amiable Daughter Louisa. She has, Sir, her very Eyes! Her Features! Her Look! Her Air ! and is in every Respect so true a Copy, that were you not certain of her being too fast confined in Portugal, you might eafily mistake her for your Daughter. And this Lady, Sir, I have prevail'd upon to accompany me hither, in order to pass your Examination and Opinion: And if fhe

II.

had

of

he

Ef-

ft.

0-

ur

to

W

d

le

1

-

d

,

V.

the appears the fame to you, as the does to me, you will doubtless find much Consolation in her so near Resemblance, and suture Acquaintance. She is now, Sir, in the Coach at the Door; where she only waits to know your Pleasure. If I have your Permission, I will immediately introduce her to you: And if not, I must beg your Leave, Sir, to carry her an Answer to the contrary.

Oh! no! my dear! dear Boy! (return'd the Old Gentleman, still weeping) be what she will, if she merits thy Regard, she shall ever be welcome to any thing in my Power! but if she is so very much like my Daughter, as you now represent her, she may challenge yet more, if it be possible. And therefore, my dear Child! Pray let me view her immediately:

Here the Captain ran down to the Coach, and handing Louisa out of it, he whisper'd to her all that he had said to her Father; upon which she wore her Mask till she came up Stairs into the Dining-Room. But she trembled to such a Degree, that she was ready to drop down with excessive Agitation. And when she was brought before her Father, the Captain (having still hold of her Hand) said to him,—This, Sir, is the Lady I told you of. And then, turning to Louisa, Madam, said he, will you please to savour me with your Mask?—Upon which he

took it from her Face; and she, immediately fell upon her Knees; while her Father rivetting his wondering Eyes to hers, for about half a Minute; at last, run to her with a Burst of Extasy too mighty to be described. And taking her in his Arms, with a Gush of joyful Tears, he cried out,—O ye immortal Powers! Or my transported Eyes have lost their Sense! Or this is my own long-lost Louisa! Speak, Dear Creature! If thou art no Illusion, speak to thy poor astonished Father! and bless him 'ere he dies!

Here Louisa, unable any longer to contain the melting Extafy of her Passion, fell upon his Knees; and broke out in the most extravagant Sympathy of joyful Anguish, that can possibly be conceived! Saying, -O ye bleffed Powers! I shall expire with excessive Joy! Sure never did Mortal feel such mighty Happiness before! Then she kissed his Hands with such Fervency as is very rarely feen, now-a-days, from an only Daughter, to a Father of his Age and Fortune. But as potently as this most affecting Scene was felt by either of them, the muchmoved Captain was not without his Share of it: For he was as exquifitely wrought by beholding them, as they could possibly be themselves. When the Old Gentleman had a good deal spent his Spirits, in this extraordinary Rapture; and fomeVII.

ately

tting

alf a

Ex-

king

ars,

this

)ear

thy

he

tain

his

ant

bly

8!

ver e!

cy n-

t-

ng h-

t:

1-

s. it

d

somewhat again recover'd himself; as he was clearing his Eyes with his Handkerchief, which had been some Time drown'd in Tears, he beheld the worthy Captain in the like melted Condition with himself: Upon which he thus renew'd the tender Scene with him .- I have, my dear Son, faid he, been here enjoying the highest Pitch of Happiness and Transport, that Mortal Bleffings can inspire me with; and have most ungratefully neglected (under God) the generous Author of it all. But thou art too good, my dearest Son! not to excuse the great Defect of my Old Age: And I will now make it the Bufiness of my few remaining Days, to reward thy virtuous and noble Deeds, in fome Degree equal to their high Defert. I know thou lovest my Child Louisa; thy Actions have gloriously proved it! to a most eminent Degree. And, that she loves thee, and only thee, she hath indeed already given me a very fatal Proof. Then, fince Heaven hath inspired you both with the like virtuous Constancy and Affection, may the same All-ruling Powers for ever bless! prosper! and protect you together, in the same mutual Love, through a long and honourable Life.—Here he took hold of each of their Hands, and as they both knelt down before him, he, faying thus, joined them together: As your Virtue, Love, and Constancy, do well de-

Ch.

am

hir

fuc'

wh

An

ma

to

Ы

de

I

S

t

l

deferve each other; from this happy Hour, Both be One: I now can make no Distinction! I can feel no Difference! You are Both my Children: And soon, I hope, will be made one Flesh according to the Law.

CHAP. III.

The Conclusion of the above Story, and fome Remarks thereon, by Silvius: With bis Return to England, and who he first met there.

A FTER the tender, and now happy Father had raifed them both up, continued Mr. Simpson, and they had embraced one another all round, he proposed them a certain Day to solemnize their Nuptials: And which they both approving of, it was, when the Time came, as highly celebrated as any Person's Wedding of equal Rank and Fortune had perhaps ever been known in any Age.

Ay, Sir! Reply'd Silvius (in a Rapture) and they richly deferved it too. Come, Sir, a Glass of Thanks to you for this agreeable Hiftory. Methinks, I am so inspired with it, that I could heartily wish, I had my dear Angelica in the same Place: And that I could gain her Person (for her Heart I am sure I have) by the same

VII.

lour,

ion!

my

one

and

ith

rst

a.

ed

- 0

n

h

e

S

ame glorious Attempt. By Heaven! I should think myfelf infinitely happy, in giving her fuch an Instance of my Love. But who knows what Providence hath still in Store for me? And, if I cannot fo well deferve her by my Toils and Service for her, I will endeavour to make her fome Amends by my Constancy and Love. Nay, and I will hazard some Hardships too, but I will yet convince her more, if poffible, how well I will deserve her. Oh! my dear Friend! continued he to Mr. Simpson, I shall often think of this instructive! this infpiring! this moving! moral Lesson! By my Soul! I envy that gallant charming Gentleman, the Glory he atchieved by that one Deed! far beyond the ambitious, bloody Conquests of him who (by the huge Sacrifices of his poor Fellow-Creatures) won the finful World! Ambition is a Vice! Nay, a Sin of the first Magnitude! It first robbed high Heaven of its second Inhabitant! And tumbled him and all his Admirers and Abettors into everlasting Misery. Love! Generous! Glorious Love! is one of the Heavenly Virtues. But, pray Sir, tell me, aid he to Mr. Simpson, did Louisa's Father recover his Health do you know, with the Return of his Daughter?

O yes! Sir, Reply'd Mr. Simpsan, and may be alive too, at this Instant, for aught I know:

But indeed, they durst not inform Louisa, for some Time after, of the Death of her Brother, for fear of the dangerous Effects it might have upon her.

Ay, poor Gentleman! Cry'd Silvius, it wa Pity he had not lived to have partaken of his Fa. ther's and Sifter's Happiness. But Providence always deals the best; and if we could but see into hidden Causes, we should most assuredly find it so, in every Thing.

This Story was fo deeply engraved in the Mind of Silvius, that he could not, by any Means, drive it from his Memory; fo that the next Day when he was got under fail (as he paft by the Convent,) he had every Particular of it, which passed at that Place, so strongly imprinted in his Mind, that he could hardly help conceiting but that the Affair was just that Moment compleated. Nor could he be fatisfy'd, till he had committed the whole Transaction into the Records of his valuable Journal. And which is here fet down in this Hiftory, in the very fame Manner that he delivered it to us. The penning and frequent perufing of which Story, was a very pleafing Amusement to him, during the greatest Part of his Voyage from Portugal to England.

And now, Fortune feem'd to fmile upon him again; for as he had a very crank Veffel, and fine,

VII.

fa, for

rother.

t have

it wa

is Fa.

ice al-

e into

find it

n the

any

t the

paft

f it,

rint-

con-

Mo-

y'd,

noif

And

the

us.

ich

im,

om

im

ind

ie,

fine, steady, fresh Gales from the South Points, he got to Portsmouth on the eighth Day from Lisbon. And where he had not been on Shore half an Hour, before he met his trusty Friend and Fellow-Servant, with whom he had lest the Charge of his own and Lady Rosetta's Effects, when he made his rash and inconsiderate Lanch into the Schooner. They no sooner saw one another, but each was struck aghast; nor could they easily credit what their Eyes beheld. But at length, after a sufficient Gaze at each other, Silvius thus thought proper to cut their Cord of Silence. What! my Friend! is it possible that you should have reach'd no farther yet?

No, Sir, returned James, (for that was the young 'Man's Name) you see we are not: But pray, Sir, how long have you been here? I am fure, I did not expect to fee you in England these six Months at soonest .- I have not been here many Minutes, return'd Silvius; but I am glad to my very Heart and Soul, that you are got no farther: And that I happened now to meet you gives me more Pleasure than I can well express. You may imagine that I must confequently have Matters of some Importance to enquire of you; and perhaps others to com_ municate. Therefore, you must oblige me with the Indulgence of a few Minutes at this Tayern; only while we drink one Pint of Wine

nif

m r

uh:

So

do

sh

be

Wine together; and if you are not at Leisure, I will then dismiss you.—Here they both run into the Tavern, and having called for a Pint of Port, Silvius desired of James briefly to inform him of all that had passed, since he lest the Ship Lovely. And if he could stay to hear it, he told him he would then give him the like Account of himself. When accordingly the young Man began his Tale as follows.

When our Captain, Sir, was informed how fwiftly you had flown from the Ship into the Portugueze Boat; and also faw you there standing in it; he could hardly credit what he had But if this fo much furprized heard and feen. him, he was yet at a greater Loss to account for the Cause of such an odd Departure. And I can affure you that very prejudicial Conjectures were at first made therefrom. The Captain, you may remember, Sir, endcavoured to frighten the Pilots on board of us; and we most of us did expect that they would have comply'd; but when the Captain found that that Hope must vanish, he instantly ran down to the Great Cabbin and acquainted my Lady with the Affair: Who was fo exceedingly furprized at the News, that she turned as pale as Death in a Moment; and fat looking at the Captain some Minutes, without being able to utter one Word. length, she cried out, with an Accent of Astonishment.

VII.

fure.

n in-

nt of

form

Ship

, he

Ac-

oung

how

the

and-

had

zed

unt

And

jec-

ap-

to

nost

'd:

ope

eat

ir:

VS,

it;

es,

At

0at.

nishment.-Lord have Mercy upon us! What can be the Meaning of fuch a dangerous and unaccountable Proceeding in this young Fellow? Something more than ordinary must certainly have spurred him on to this sudden and hazar dous Attempt. I hope, and indeed I cannot think but that the Lad is honest .- Indeed, I believe fo Madam, return'd the Captain. vet, I must own that his Manner of leaving the Ship has fomething fo whimfical and romantic in it, that it may possibly admit of a Doubt : And which, Madam, I chiefly draw from this; he is very well affured that at this Time we dare not pursue him into Liston: And therefore, his perilous Attempt to reach that Place, in particular, I must confess does somewhat alarm me.

This Argument of the Captain's a little starled my young Lady; but after a Moment's Reflection, the returned to the Captain thus:-But, pray Sir, tell me, what could he carry away with him that could make him think it worth his while? you fay that he had neither Box nor Bundle. And my Jewels, Money, Plate and all other portable Things of Value, are secured in my strong Boxes: Therefore it is impossible that he could have made this Elopement with any Intent to wrong me. - O la! Madam, cry'd Mrs. Fudy (the Lady's Waiting Maid) I hope he has not reprived me of any thing!

di

fro

B

DP

S.

thing! Upon which she immediately ran to examine her Trunk: And her sensible Apprehenfion having made my Lady and the Captain fmile, I thought it then a proper Time to unfold the whole Mystery to them; and which I die in so successful a Manner, that my Lady, at last, was so far from being angry with you: that she has both pity'd your Condition, and dreaded your Fate a thousand times since. The fimple Man! cry'd she, if he was going to Lifbon to visit a Lady, he must certainly want his Cloaths with him; nay, and his Linen; and doubtless Money too. I could box his Ears, it I were by him; the inconfiderate Monkey! Had he but acquainted me with his Refolutions (continued she) and that he was determined to go, he should have had any thing to affift him that he could have had a Mind for. Befides, if Father Benedict should happen to find him out, what wou'd become of him? O Madam, replied the Captain, if once the Priest snaps him, the Inquisition will soon spoil his Knight-Errantry, I'll answer for it. But he has already given me two fuch Instances of his Resolution and Courage, that I am apt to believe no two or three Portugueze will eafily carry him away without Bloodshed. And now I know his View and the Power which attracts him, I really like his Spirit fo fincerely, that I should be heartily glad

VII

to ex-

rehen-

aptair

unfold I did

ly, at

you;

The

Lif-

t his

and

rs, it

key!

tions

ed to

him

out,

re-

im,

and or way iew like tily

glad to hear of the Accomplishment of his Wish, and his safe Return to England. This, Sir, is chiefly what has past since you left us. But you must understand, that just as we came off from the Bay of Biscay, we had the Missortune by a sudden Squall, to carry away a Topmast; and my Lady being heartily sick of the Sea, we put in here to resit: So that the Vessel will carry the heaviest of our Luggage round to London, and my Lady will hire a Coach and Saddle Horses for herself and Servants to go by Land: We came in here but this very Morning; and she talks of staying here three or four Days to rest herself; and to view the Garrison and Dock; which they say are very fine.

Here, Silvius was very thankful to the young Fellow for the faithful Discharge of his Promise; and having inform'd him of all he had seen and met with at Lisbon; he wish'd him to bear his Duty to his Lady, and acquaint her with all that had now passed between them: And that he would wait there for his Return.

CHAP.

aft Jo

CHAP. IV.

Silvius is sent for by his young Lady, who receives him with great Courtesy. And sends him immediately to London on particular Business. For which and past Services, she very fufficiently rewards him.

SILVIUS had not wore out a full Quarter of an Hour's impatient Expectation, before honest James return'd to the Tavern with his Lady Rosetta's Answer; importing that she had an eager Defire to fee him; and that she was exceedingly furprized and pleafed when the received his unexpected Message. Numbers of fine Ladies, had they been now in Rosetta's Place, would doubtless have flown into the most furious Passion, and perhaps have facrificed a favourite Fan, or a Set of China; or have cuffed her Waiting-Maid, or abused all her other Servants on Silvius's Account. And that, when she first was informed that it was the God of Love, who drove him fo precipitately from her Ship, it would have been a Prefumption next to Blasphemy, to have mentioned the vulgar, odious Passions of a Vassal, to fuch Divinity. But our generous Rosetta being

of a more noble and fenfible Soul, and difdaining all fuch pitiful and unworthy Airs, was not shamed to confess (even to his Face) her fincere Toy for the Return of an honest, worthy Peron, who had before so faithfully ferved her. Nay, and fhe did not only express it in worthless Words; but also, having heard his whole Story from his own Mouth (which he now delivered at her particular and most earnest Request, and which she listened to with great Satisfaction and Tenderness) She only begged of him to fet out next Morning for London, and there, prepare her a ready-furnished House; as pleafant and commodious as he could, and to fend her Word when it would be ready to receive her; and then fhe would do fomething for him that should, in Part, reward his past Disappointment and Toil.

This our Hero was so ready to comply with, and knowing her present Necessity for it, that he obtained her Leave to set out that very Afternoon, and by Twelve o'Clock that Night reach'd London. But we should here take notice that however, before he set out (to entertain and amuse his young Lady at her leisure Hours) he recommended to her the Perusal of his History of Louisa, as above related. The next Day after his Arrival in Town, he applied to his old Lodging at the Cosse-house; where by the Help of his Landlord, he provided as a-

1

greeable

And par-

past ards

bewith fhe

fhe s of ta's the

or all

And was ipire-

onto

ing of

oi io P. bon the

greeable and convenient a House as his Lady could possibly desire. And after having sent her Advice thereof, and seen it put into compleat Order, and got therein all Things necessary for her Reception, he set out, and met her Ten Miles on her Way, and attended her safe Arrival again to London.

Perhaps it might be requisite, before we proceed any further in the prefent Path, to make a small Halt, and to acquaint our Readers here, that the very first Hour which Silvius had to spare, after he came again to Town, he transmitted the History of his late disappointed Voyage to Lisbon (as well as his fafe Return) to his Father and Mother; and in another Pacquet, the like Account was dispatched to his Friend, Mr. Robert Wilful: With very strong Injunctions that they should make a very particular Enquiry after the Person of his dear Angelica: And to fend him an expeditious and faithful Account of all they could learn concerning her And it was about two Days after Rosetta's Arrival in London, that he receiv'd the following Letter from his Friend.

My Dear Friend Silvius,

IT is with the utmost Pleasure that I hear of your safe Return to England; but with the utmost

stmest Concern that your Voyage hath been for willome, and unsuccessful: And your Informa_ ion that Miss Angelica is again return'd to this Part of the World, hath given me more Surprize ban all the other Part of your Letter: For not one Person hereabouts knows any thing at all of the Matter. However, according to your Request, I made the best Enquiry I could at the House of Lady Worthy; and to my great Astonishment, I was there inform'd, that Miss Angelica and her Mother, were so far from being arriv'd there, that the old Lady and her Son-inlaw, Mr. Smith, and his Wife, were all fet out this very Morning to make fome Secret Vifit together, and no one knows whither. I heartily wish they may not have heard of some disagreeable News. Your Father and Mother (who are all that know of your Letter) defire their Bleffing to you. As foon as I am able to fend you better Intelligence, you may expect without fail, to hear from me. In the mean Time, a Line or two from you will be the highest Satisfaction to,

Yours, &c.

R. WILFUL.

The Reception of this Letter put poor Silvius most dreadfully on the Tenters. He in-Vol. III. C deed

rder, Rees on

VII.

could

dvice

again

pro-

nake nere, d to

oyhis uet,

nd,

ular ca:

er. Aring

of

he

oft

rate

Bleff

equa

VEI

the

Wr

Bar

for

mui

Del

to

fon tre

chi

Ru

ind

tio

and

ha

for

So

fal

m

A

21

th

deed knew, that it was very possible Miss An. gelica and her Mother might be very fafe, and yet not arrived at the Lady Worthy's; because it was not, at that Time, above two or three and twenty Days fince they fet fail from Lifbon. But then, this fecret Journey of the Lady Worthy, who was not now accustomed to these kind of Sallies, made Silvius to apprehend no good Boding therefrom. But to make him fome Atonement for his past and present Anxieties, the generous Rosetta fent for him to come up Stairs to her, and thus address'd him:

Mr. Greenland, I am greatly obliged to you for the Amusement of your agreeable History of Louisa; I think it excessive moving, pretty, and entertaining: I have read it over feveral Times; and it hath furnished me with many very lively Ideas of the horrid and gloomy Snare I had fo nearly fallen into; and my Deliverance from which, I (under God) attribute you the lucky Author of. It hath pleafed Providence to possess me with a very affluent Fortune; together with all the Bleffings of Nature, in Personal Benefits; I mean, such as the true Use of all my Senses; and for which, in particular, I am bound to render my great Creator a perpetual Thankfgiving, in that I am both in Mind and Person, entirely free from all un-

grateful

VII.

An.

, and

cause

hree

Bon.

Vor-

hefe

l no

ome

ies,

up

ou

ry

y,

al

y

y

-

e

-

,

gateful Deformity. But all those inestimable Beffings, I fay, had well nigh been render'd equal to me with that of a most miserable Reverse. For what are all those happy Portions of the Divine Beneficence, to a poor contracted Wretch, who is fadly doom'd by the unlawful Barbarity of Man to a perpetual Prison? And for the Deliverance from which horrid Fate. I must acknowledge myself your most profound Debtor. And furthermore, I shall now confess to you, that by an accidental Over-hearing of fome Conversation between yourself, and the treacherous Father Benedict, (who was the chief Counsellor and Abettor in my design'd Ruin) concerning a holy Vision (which was, indeed, as obsolete to me, as to your Conception) hath contributed not a little, to awaken and alarm my lethargic Reason; and which had fo long before been apoplext, by the poifonous Administrations of that vile Impostor. So that I am resolved to admit no more of that falle Tribe, on any Account, to come within my Walls. I have many Times fince that Accident, both privately read, weigh'd, and well confidered within my own Mind, the mighty Danger, as well as their criminal and ambitious Views, in their erroneous Doc. trine: And I am now thoroughly convinced of their Impositions; and also absolutely resolved

C 2

to shake off their horrid Tyranny for the fu. ture. For I am now of a confirm'd Opinion, that that Religion, which admits of fuch/unrighteous and unnatural Proceedings, is both unwarrantable and diabolical. And I have also much Confolation, when I reflect, that as you have discovered an honest and sensible Genius, and a lively and enterprizing Spirit, with Circumstances too narrowly contracted for the Directions of your sprightly and generous Soul; and particularly in your hopeful Prospect with the worthy young Lady, whom you are in to firm a League with; I am infinitely happy that I have it in my Power, in some Measure, to reward your Services towards me: And by fo doing, to enable you to improve your amorous Claim, by a fmall Amendment of your present Fortune. There is a Bill for you, of 500 Pounds, which I do infift upon your Accepting of; and I do still account myself so far your future Debtor, as to affure you of my firm Refolution to ferve you, whenever an Opportunity shall hereafter present itself for my And, as the fair and worthy Object fo doing. of your true Affections is now, you fay, return'd to England; I do naturally imagine, that your Inclination and Defires are wing'd with great Impatience to find her out. Therefore, you are now at your free Liberty to difofe of yourself, as you may see convenient: And my House shall always be at your Service. My Steward's Table and an Apartment which will order for you, may perhaps, prevent your falling into idle Company and needless Expences, till you are better settled and disposed of.

All this uncommon Generosity was deliver'd to Silvius in such a pleasant Manner, as fill'd him with the utmost Sensibility of her beneficent Goodness; and at the same Time, almost debilitated him of all Power of Speech, so that he was incapable of returning her that Tribute of Acknowledgments which he so feelingly understood was her real Due. Rosetta saw into his grateful Consusion; and therefore would not stay any longer at this time to encrease it; but, adding that she was then going to be a little engaged, and that she would speak to him again at her more Leisure, she immediately withdrew; and lest him entirely overwhelm'd with Surprize, Joy, and Gratitude.

C 3

CHAP.

lifofe

VII

ie fu.

inion,

both

e alfo

s you

Cir-

the

Soul;

with

in to

that

, to

y fo

mo-

YOUR

, of

Ac-

far

my

an

my ject rene, g'd re-

CHAP. V.

Chiefly consisting of Letters; and some other Proceedings.

Days more, were bufily Employ'd in the opposite Passions of Joy and Grief, (the first occasion'd by this more than generous Donation of his liberal Lady's; and the latter by his anxious Fears and Crosses in his Love) he, at length, received the following Epistle by the General-Post, inclosed in another from his Friend, Mr. Robert Wilful, with these Words:

Dear Friend,

THE Inclosed, which you will find comes from your Soul's dear Delight, came to my Hand by the Post, this very Morning; with a Line in the outside Case directed to myself: desiring, that if you were in England, I would forward it to you, with the utmost Expedition. In Consequence of which, I would have gladly brought it to you myself, Post; but that my Father being at this Time very Ill; and I not knowing that such a Proceeding could be of the least Service

Service to you; can only give you the joyful Compliment of its Arrival, and praying that it may answer your full Desire, hope you will find no Impediment, nor Protraction in its Passage to Jou. I have no News at present, our Friends are all well (my poor Father excepted.)

R. WILFUL,

This Token of Friendship from Mr. Wilful, produced such an impatient Agitation in his Mind, that he could scarcely spare Time to course his Eye swiftly over it, before his trembling Hands broke the waxen Fetters of his Dear Augelica's Soul, which till then, this solded Paper Proxy had held Sacred, close, and silent; and which being now most eagerly Examined, produced him the sollowing Intelligence.

My Dearest Silvius !

W E were last Month very strangely alarmed at Lisbon by the sudden Departure of an English Ship, in the Dead of Night; which but the very Day before arrived. There was carry'd away in her, it's said, a young Lady of an immense Fortune; and that this Rape was perpetrated by the Captain of the Vessel, in Con-C 4 junction

Some

'two
'd in
(the

lathis wing ano-

lful,

omes e to

oith elf:

ion. dly Fa-

w-

ast ice junction with a Person of your Name, who was a Steward to her and her Brother; and that the Ship was returned again for England. As I had expected your Arrival in that Port, in Confequence of your Letter, evey Hour for some Weeks before, you my eafily Imagine how much I was alarm'd at this loud and dangerous Report. My Thoughts, my Hopes, my Wishes, and my whole Soul were continually bent on England. I fludied every plausible Device I could to alarm my Mother with some fudden Cause to draw her to my Purpose: And at length I have succeeded. We bave had but a very indifferent Passage; and four Days since arriv'd at Greenwich. My Mamma, before we came ashore, had prepared feveral Letters for W-fhire; and determined to proceed no farther than London, till she receiv'd an Answer to some of them: In the mean time, I have not been suffered the Opportunity of one single Minute, to write a Line in quest of you: For my Mamma is my Constant bedfellow; and keeps this strict Eye upon me, on Account of what she had heard of our Amour before I left England. I imagined that she would have proceeded immediately for W-fhire : Where I hoped to have heard some fatisfactory Account of you: But to my great Mortification, my whole Design is discover'd; and instead of our going to Vifit the Lady Worthy, she, and my

bo was

at the

I had

Confe-

Weeks

vas a-

. My

whole

Au.

n my

to my

We

and

My

ared

rmi-

1 She

the

rtu-

ant

be-

uld

e :

ory

on,

of

nd

ny

my Uncle and Aunt Smith, are Arrived here: And to-morrow we all fet out for some Place in the Country; where we shall flay but one Day; and as far as I can yet learn, Shall keep continually moving from Place to Place (as I imagine to prevent my directing you how to find me out) till we return for Lisbon; which I apprehend will not be long first. But all their whole Plan which is entirely directed by my Uncle Smith, is kept as secret as possible from my Penetration. However, this severe Usage shall not change my Mind in your behalf, and the next Opportunity I have to write, you may expect to find it at the Post Office General, in London. So that not knowing where, or how better to direct to you, if this comes to your Hand, you must take your Measures to come at it, accordingly; till we can gain a better Intelligence of each other.

Tower-Hill, Nov. 30. ANGELICA.

Sure, never was Lover more severely perplexed, than was our poor embarrass'd Hero, at his viewing the Contents of this Letter. And had not his whole and sole Happiness depended on his Union with this charming Creature; together with the most inviolable Resolution to pursue her to the last Spark of Life, he would

C 5

doubales

at

70

a

201

as ii

de

doubtless now have dropt his Purpose; sim the Goddess Fortune had as much befriended Endeavours, as Love had been the Reverle For these two blind Deities, it seems, could no by any Means be brought to act in Concer After Silvius had perused this vexatious Epist over and over, and found himfelf more diffrac ted every time he read it; he at length, deter mined to hold himfelf in a continued Reading to follow her, the first Moment that he should gain the least Direction by a second Letter. And while he was ruminating on this Refolution it presently occur'd to him, that the date of this very Letter now in his Hand was no less than five Days old. By which he observed that it was very posible, that there might be another at that very Inftant ready for him at the General Post Office : Which Recollection fo transported his Thoughts with a glowing Hope, that he had not Power to flay another Moment from feeking after what he efteem'd a Thing of so much Consequence. But if the bare Hope and Defire of a Letter could inspire him with fuch an Inundation of Transport; how was his overbearing Flood of Joy exaggarated when he receiv'd this fo much wish'd for Pacquet of Importance? And which was to this Effect :

URE never was poor Creature so misera-

bly rack'd by a Variety of wretched Pertur-

culty;

e; find ndedh Reverse ould no oncen Epift diftrac deter

thould. r.And tion it of this than

adine

erved night him ecti-

ving ther m'd

the oire rt;

zafor

to.

E

ations and Embarrassments as I am! It grieves ne to the very Soul to reflect that I am the un-Dappy Cause of so much Fatigue! So many Inconveniencies and such a Succession of Disquietudes as I know, my Worthy Silvius, my unhappy Situation must have caused you. But what can we do? We are the Slaves of Fate and must per Norce Submit to all his Decrees, though never for repugnant to our Wishes. I am now too sufficient-By convinced that our present uncertain and retrograde Courfe, is purely on my Account; and that when my Mamma, my Uncle and Aunt, and Lady Worthy, have spent all their covenient Time-in each other's Company, and in traverfing this County, and perhaps the next; we shall be Shipt off again for Portugal with as little Ceremony as possible. And I have, as yet, the Dif-Satisfaction to assure you that all their future Designs are kept so profound, that when we get into our Goach we sometimes seem to consider, several Minutes, for our own Determination to what Point of the Compass the Coachman shall next proceed to drive us: And which you must take notice, is never two Doys together the Same, So that I cannot inform you, as yet, even where

we shall go next. And I have the greatest Diffi-

Ch

nez

for

Lo

up ac

ye

ſh

fu

S

b

1

(

cu'ty imaginable to scribble over this wretched and ungrateful Account. And which, too, is very uncertain whether it will reach London; for I an obliged to trust it to the Care and Promise of on of the Servant Maids where we now are; and whom I have well rewarded for that Trouble. We are now just going into the Coach, but my Manma pretends that she does not yet know to what Part of the Country we are going. Therefore! know of no better Way at present than this to direct to you; and the first Minute I can possibly procure to myself, I shall again pursue the same Method. In the mean Time, let me advise you to compose your Mind and Spirits, as happily as you can; since all you can do, or suffer to the contrary, will avail you no Advantage: And this, be fill affured of, that neitheer Force, nor Art, Shalle ver make me break my Promise to you.

Canterbury, Dec.

ANGELICA.

next

It is almost impossible to describe the aggravating Perplexity, and vast Variety of Propositions which here occur'd to him, after he had read the Letter. He would have set out that very Hour for Canterbury with all his Heart and Soul; but that the Improbability of his sinding them was one Bar to his Scheme; and the Hope of a more perfect Direction by the

next Post constrain'd him to wait with Patience for the Event.

Aiter our Silvius had received the above Letters, and had taken a little Time to chew upon them, he concluded it most advisable to acquaint his generous Lady, whose Steward he yet was, with the Nature of his Situation that fhe might not be furprifed or offended at his fudden Excursion, should he happen to receive any better Encouragement to pursue her. fetta approved of this Step. But alas! there was no Hope of it. Several Days elaps'd before he heard the least Syllable further from her: At length he received a small Billet of two or three Lines, which was to the fame Purpose as the last, and dated now from Dover; Where the told him the expected, or at least hoped, they should stay two or three Days: Upon this Prospect, he instantly resolved to set out in quest of her, and as he resolved to pursue them, in case they should be departed that Place before he should arrive, and that he could but acquire the least Information of what Road they had taken. He provided himself with the best Horse he could possibly procure; and having fignify'd his Purpose to his Lady, he set out on this extraordinary and hazardous Expedition. Where we shall now leave him to the Disposal of Providence, and confine our Pen for the prefent

VII

ed and

I an

and

Iam.

what

irea

ocure

bad.

pose

an;

ary,

Still

ll e-

ÇA.

ra.

pohe

aut

art

nis

nd

he

1

Ch

qui

infi

her

wa ve

th

ix

11

n tl

4

f

present to the Service of some superior Objects, at least, according to the Distinction of vulgar Ru'e.

CHAP. VI.

While Silvius is absent in quest of Angelica, a very unexpected Turn happens in the Affairs of his Lady Rosetta; which contributes much to the Credit and Advantage of our Hero Silvius.

APTAIN Oldnall in the Ship Lovely, was now about this Time arrived in the River Thames, with the remaining Effects of the young Lady Rosetta: And having lodged them all in the Custom-house; he came to wait upon her with the News; as alfo, to pay his Respects to her: And to acquaint her that her Presence would be indispensibly Necessary to fee them all open'd, before fhe could have them discharged; and that he, the Captain, would then see them all fafely delivered at her own Door, himself. As she had now none but Livery Servants about her, she order'd her Coach to be got immediately ready, and infifting on the Captain's entering it, with her; they went directly to the Custom-house together. When she had done every thing that was requifite: VI

jects,

ulga

nge.

rs in

bich

Ad.

jely,

the

s of

ged

to

pay

hat

ary

ive

in,

er

ut

er 1-

y

r.

-

te:

quisite at that Place, she return'd home, but insisted on the Captain's Company to dine with her, that Day; Who, after a great many modest Excuses, at length consented. But as there was some Effects amongst Rosetta's Things, of very great Consequence, he stay'd to continue the Charge of them till they should be deliver'd safely at her own House.

As Rosetta had naturally anoble, free, and unfashionable Soul, she now began to ruminate what kind of Gratuity she should tender this worthy Man, for all the Hardships, Tendernefs, and ready Services which he had shewn for her Prefervation and Welfare. She examined within her own Breast, every Particular of his Behaviour, from her first fetting out; and when she reflected on his constant Care and Fidelity, his friendly Administration and kindConcern, during her Sea-fickness, it wrought more upon her generous Mind, than all his other Services. Strange Propositions rose in her Mind to his Advantage, and were all answered, within, by Debates of the utmost Force. But if her present Inclinations were now elevated in his Behalf, they were much more fo, when he absolutely refused her the Acceptance of a very confiderable Bill, which she offer'd him, in the politest Manner imaginable. She was ravish'd with his genteel Spirit; admired the Manner of his Refusal; and

4

ad

hſ

in t

in

u

0

v

fo

in

0

'n

a

£

1

was now more charm'd with his Person, Understanding, and Address than ever. She compared his disinterested, polite Behaviour, to that of Louisa's Captain, in Silvias's History, and could not but think that her own Adventure had some Similitude to it. And therefore, she encouraged no one Thought but what furnish'd her with some Idea to his Advantage. In short, as her whole Mind was now dedicated to a grateful Resolution, and her tender Soul was agitated to the highest Degree, in his Favour; she had frequently, from this Time, the Pleasure of his Company by her own particular Desire, and Appointment.

During this agreeable Intercourfe, the Captain's Ship (Lovely) was again repairing for another Voyage; and being suddenly to fall down the River, he acquainted Rosetta therewith: Enquiring if the had any Commands to Portugal. The very Name of the Place was shocking to her; and the News of his being quickly to depart, made a very fenfible Impression on her yielding and tender Mind: Especially, as it was fo much before foften'd and moulded ready to receive it. For indeed she had now concluded on a Plan which she resolved to execute before his Deptrture. And by way of Introduction, the now expostulated with him, whether he might not have fome Caufe to apprehend his being entrap'd

Un.

com

r, to

tory.

dven.

here

what

tage,

icat-

nder

hi.

me,

par.

ap-

no-

wn

th:

tu-

k-

cly

on

it

dy

ed

re

re

it

map'd, when he came to Liston, by the Power and Malice of Father Benedict? The Captain inswer'd, that he fear'd nothing from his Power, but his private Practice, with the Assistance of his good Brethren, in case they should surprise him in the Night.

The next Day, by Rosetta's particular Request, he came again to dine with her. But low shall I describe their inward Emotions, when Rosetta, after the Cloth was taken away, and being now by themselves, in the most tender and affectionate Manner, began to enumerate to him the many fingular Obligations she found herself indebted to him? The Manner in which she proceeded to describe and recount them, was so feelingly expressive, that the was herfelf thereby, wrought into a much more foft and melting Mood, than she was well aware of. She affured him that the had a more elevated Satisfaction in rewarding the meritorious Actions and Deferts of those, who either had a Right to it, or really stood in Need of it, than in any other Enjoyment of that Fortune which Providence had been pleafed to blefs her with. And fince the could not, without affection, reflect on the vast Account of Obligations which she found herself bound to him for; and more especially, as he objected against all her Hopes of making him fome little Retaliation;

fhe

Ch.

whi

dea defi

her

abl

ful

no

of

he

it;

li

1

Į,

ı,

the now conjured him to accept of a small Token of that Esteem she should ever retain for his Person and Virtue.

Here the prefented to him a fmall Shag. green-case, which the Captain accepted of with the profoundest Respect, and true Sensibility of her Generofity, found therein, a very rich Diamond Ring; which producing a very visible Confusion in his Looks, the inftantly prevented his Attempt to either apologize or harange her with any Return, by proceeding thus : I beg, Captain Oldnall, that you will not attempt to confound me, by a Refufal of that minute Trifle; or otherwise, to embarrafo me with the least Shadew of Thanks. When I reflect what Obligations I have to you, I am highly fensible that my whole Fortune could not over-pay you for the Danger, Hardthips, and Integrity of your past Services. have, perhaps, a higher Veneration, for your Great-worth, than you may readily conceive; and I can honeftly affure you, that the true Merit of every Person (as far as I am able to discover it) shall always be an inviolable Standard for me, to measure them my proportionable Degree of Esteem. This Declaration was delivered in fo fweet and intelligible a Manner, that the Captain being inspired thereby, was obliged to give a little Vent to that glowing Fire which Ch. 6.

VII

II To

in for

Shag.

d of

nfibi.

Very

very

antly

ze or

ding

Will

ufal

em· nks.

ou.

une

ird-

our

e;

ue

to

n-

2-

e-

r,

)-

h

42

which he had so long, and so industriously endeavour'd to Smother and conceal within his desponding Breast. And which he now sound her gentle and generous Address and Discourse had fann'd into so fierce a Flame, that he must absolutely give it Air, or be consumed by its further Concealment. And therefore, being no longer able to withstand the mighty Impulse of his Soul, falling immediately on his Knees, he address'd her to this Effect.

Alas! Madam, you fee how your Generofity is abused; you have been graciously loadling me with Favours and Encomiums, which have only contributed to ruin me with Prefumption. You have condescended, Madam, to express my past Proceedings ingenerous Epithets, which they never merited. Whatever I wish'd to do in your dear Behalf, was always undertaken, Madam, with a fordid mercenary View, towards myself. Your Goodness imagined, doubtless, that it was all attempted with a Design to serve and oblige you. Alas! Madam, you were, indeed, deceived: I did it only to gratify the Inclinations and Desires of my own diffracted Soul. For, believe me, thou dear and best of Women! That I could actually have thought myself bleft to the highest Pitch of Happiness, could I but have died in rendering you the least Jot of real Service there-

by.

Ch.

rie

g

Th

ou

ne

u

n

by. And even now, Madam, could your Goodness but pronounce my Pardon, for this Boldness; I could gladly resign my Breath to enjoy the Satisfaction of dying in your Esteem When you offered me Gold, Madam, I could only regard it as the vulgar Reward of every Wretch's Dire : But this durable Pledge of inestimable Goodness from those Hands, I shall ever value to a more eminent Degree than all the paultry Gold (from any other Bounty) that the whole World could furnish me with. But such are the extream Viciffitudes of Human-life, that it is a horrid Reflection to endure, when I conceive myfelf thus bleft, by your Presence, this Instant; and by and by, must be banish'd from the Hap. piness, and rolling in the Liquid-Elements, with no one Thought nor Thing (this dear Ring excepted) to comfort my dejected Spirits!

Here a filent Pause, accompany'd with a gentle Tear, in spight of his Endeavours to hide it, immediately took Place: Which so powerfully wrought upon the divine Rosetta, that she (raising him from his Submission) return'd him thus: O, Mr. Oldnall! You have recall'd to my Mind a thousand tender Thoughts! which show so fast upon my agitated Brain, that I am lost in their mighty Siege. I look upon you as my Deliverer! as my Protector! my

VII

you

this

th to

could

every

ledge

fair

inent

any

ould

earn

orrid

rfelf

and

Tap.

With

ling

1 a

nide

er-

hat

n'd

re-

hat

on

my d! grateful Mind, that's bound to honour you. Therefore, tell me what I can do to improve your Happiness, and you may freely command me.

Alas! Madam, answer'd the Captain (trembling) should I dare pronounce the mighty Word, (and which, indeed, need be but one, but yet that single one, is more precious to my ambitious Soul, than all the World besides,) say, Madam, should I once speak it, I fear your generous Promise would soon recant, and that you would afterwards spurn me, for my Presumption.—Surely Sir, you but little know me, reply'd Rosetta, if you can be capable of judging of me, as you speak. Pray tell me, what would you ask, that I can possibly do for you? You may be well assured that I shall deny you nothing, that is in my Power.

Why then, Madam, answer'd the Captain, (encouraged by these Words) since your unexpected Goodness hath thus inspired me, if I affend, you must attribute the Crime of this Rashness to your own Indulgence, since I find myself unavoidably constrain'd to confess to you, that the least Part of your kind Affection for me would be more rich! more precious, and more desirable to my Soul, than Words can possibly express! Or, than all Things else on this side Heaven

Heaven, can equal. Why then, Sir, reply'd as per Rosetta, imagine yourself that happy Person the st you would wish to be, and be so. Certainly, Ma. dam, reply'd the Captain, the Seat of all worldly Happiness is placed in the Imagination only. But without the pleasing Condition, which creates that Happiness, be luckily attain'd, the blest Effects can never mount the Throne. True, Sir, return'd Rosetta, and what I meant, by bidding you be that happy Man you wished; was only giving you an Affurance of every thing you could possibly ask of me, that might contribute towards it .- O beauteous ! heavenly Creature! Cry'd the Captain, in the utmost Rapture, continue but to keep that gracious Promise sacred; and my whole future Life should be but one perpetual Scene of Study, to reward your unbounded Goodness. Hand! this dear and lovely Hand! continued he (taking gently hold of it) would be a Token of that invaluable Affection which I might hereafter be in some Hopes to gain. Why then, Sir, faid Rosatta (with an Air of Gaiety and Sprightliness) take it; and the other with it, if that can make you happy. And now, I hope, you are fatisfy'd.

At these Words, the transported Captain fell again upon his Knees, and pour'd forth fuch a Flood of rapturous and and grateful Expressions

proce

that

his E

abou

held

Da.

feelic

havi

Sea Ser

Prov

fuff

the .

ly'd as perfectly convinced the generous Lady that fon the should never repent of her present Proceed. Ma. in hort, after their first Hurry of Transrld- post and Confusion were a little abated, they proceeded to discourse on Matters a little more moderate. When the Captain declared to her, that his Increase of Passion had, in spite of all his Endeavours to the contrary, continued to al und from the first Moment wherein he beheld her. And Rosetta frankly own'd, that the had conceived a kind of difinterested Affedion for him, ever fince his first human, Behaviour towards her and her Servants in their Sea-Sickness: And which being so effectually frengthened by his subsequent Services, she was determin'd to both encourage and improve it, as foon as the should be affured of a fufficient Warrant for fo doing: And which now conceived was fully compleat.

forth own generous Afts. And now, the ball a

that be fixed not rendary further Harards of

venturing again to fee a and that he freedly in

mediculy take his Meafures secondariv. The

private a Clienter of no final Confederate the

Toy of the latest the state of the off strained to the process of the process of the process a property of the configuration of exactly a

ly :

ich

the

ne.

nt.

h-

ry

ht

n-

ne

us

fe

y,

is

d

n

-

19

d

ŕ

, '

CHAP,

Ch

der

tle

for

V

im to

qu

no

ca

fo

00

ti

CHAP. VII.

Silvius returns; and gives his Lady and the Captain a fruitless Account of his last Sally. With the History of a very remarkable Exploit.

Believe, I acquainted my Readers, at our first setting out with his last Voyage, that CapainOldnall was an handsome, agreeable florid and genteel Person; as well as a Gentleman of good Understanding and modest Address: which we apprehend is no small Justification of Rosetta's proceeding in this her Choice: And as it was a voluntary Deed of her own, without the customary Preliminaries on thoseOccafions, the refolved to put him into a free Posfession of all her whole Fortune. For, true Love in a noble Soul, can prescribe no Bounds to its own generous Acts. And now, the infifted that he should not run any further Hazards by venturing again to Sea; and that he should immediately take his Measures accordingly. Thi was a Matter of no small Consequence; his Ship being already freighted, and almost ready However, her Request had too much Power to be disputed; and therefore a proper Substitute to supply his Place, was the first Article to be consider'd; and which, by a sudden

den Accident, in a few Hours after, was fettled as follows.

While they were confulting on this Point_ fomebody knock'd at the Door, which was no fooner open'd than they heard the well known Voice of our Hero, Silvius; and Rosetta, being impatient to know his Success, call'd for him to them in the Dining-room; where being questioned touching his last Adventure, he had nothing but a vexatious Account of an intricate and unfuccessful Pursuit to entertain them with; and which, in effect was, that he had followed them by the Help of flight Intelligences, till he had fairly loft them. For after they had traverst the Country in a most crook ed and puzzling Course; they, at Sandwich discharged their Coach, and hired a large Boat ; and having flow'd it well with proper Providions, they hoisted their Sails and floated away no-body knew whither. So that being thus foil'd, he was obliged to return to London, line quest of better Intelligence; and going to the Post-Office in Lombard-Street, he there found a Letter of three Days date, from Sendwich; which gave him but little better Information than what he knew before, viz. That her Uncle Smith had hired a Boat to carry them to some part of Effex: And that, while they were providing themselves with VOL. III. fome

and f bis very

VII

Our that lorid an of

efs; n of And

ithccaof-

rue nds ted

by mhi

his dy ch

er rft 1-

en

C

fic

tle

ha

St

re

tl

al

h

ir

g

1

I

fome few Necessaries, she had contrived an Opportunity to fend him this dark Account. Exhorting him to think no more of wasting his Spirits, Money, and Time in a fruitless Encounter with the Peevishness of Fate, until she should arrive to a lawful Age for the absolute Disposal of her-own Person; and then (if they both lived) he might most assuredly depend on the faithful Completon of her Promise.

Rosetta and the Captain both applauded her Constancy and Advice; and having strenuously recommended his Compliance to it, Silvius withdrew to refresh himself.

But altho' our young Hero was, at present, either too modest, or otherwise loth to be so troublesome to his Lady to rehearse it, we cannot do him that Injustice, as to deprive the Reader of a remarkable Instance of his Courage and Gallantry, which he here shew'd in the course of this Journey; and which was as follows:

In the Height of this Disappointment, as he was returning from Sandwich, he saw two Men at some Distance, ride across the Heath, and stop a couple of Chaises; which, by the Manner of their Proceeding, he judged to be no other than a Brace of honest Highwaymen; upon which, he stood still a Moment, to con-

fider

II.

Op-

Ex-

his

in-

atil

fo.

(if

le-

0-

er

ly

es

t,

o

1-

-

e

e

ficer how he should act, and having seen a little Alchouse about a Quarter of a Mile before. he refolved to return thither, and enquire the Strength of their Arms. But before he had reached the Place, he met with an elderly Gentleman and his Servant, both well mounted, and very well arm'd, and the First of whom, he thus address'd-I hope Sir you'll excuse my interrupting your Passage; but I am heartily glad to fee you both fo well provided for your Security: For within these three Minutes, I faw a couple of Men stop two Chaises, a little before you, that feem'd to me extremely fufpicious; and I was now posting back to the next Public-house, either for Shelter or Affistance. For although I have no great matter of Value about me; yet I own I have more than I should be willing to deliver up to any fuch audacious Rafcals. And if you will permit me, Sir, to keep you Company, I will now turn back and shall think myself tolerably secure under your Guardage. To which the cautious Gentleman, (having carefully furvey'd Silvius, all the Time he was speaking to him) thus reply'd - It is certain, Sir, that People who travel cannot be too cautious or too careful how they act upon the Roads. And perhans I carry Piffels myfelf, more for the lake of their Appearance, than any other Use. For

Do

indeed I never was attacked in my Life! and therefore I am not certain how I should behave in such Circumstances. But this I know, that my Pistols are in critical Order, and I do believe I should not suffer myself to be riffled by any of those Ruffians. But the bare Sight of these Instruments, is generally sufficient to answer for their Bearer's Security. However, if I should chance to meet with any, who are willing to try their further Use; I am ready for And you, Sir, do you hear, faid he to his Servant, are your Pistols in Order? can you fight? Have you a good Heart, upon Occasion ?- Fight, Sir! cry'd the Fellow, (turning as pale as Death) indeed, I never fir'd a Piftol in my Life, nor dont know how to do it, any more den I do how to make one, efait! - You faint-hearted Rascal! reply'd his Master, I suppose your Pistols are not loaded then. Shir, faid the Fellow, but dey are loaded as much as dey ever were, shinsh I had 'em; and more too : For I have ty'd a Shtring about dair Naftes, and put a Cork in deir Mouths, for fear dey should go off of deir own Accords, and Shut myshelf in de Foot, and my Horse in de Shoulder at de shame Time, as we go along .- Let me sec you Rascal! said his Master. Here honest Tezgue drew one of his Piftols out of his Holftors, and with a trembling Hand, prefented

d

-

9

d

fented it to his Master, who, upon Examination, found it however loaded sufficiently! that is to say, with Rust. And a Packthread String bound twenty times about the Steel and the Cock; and a Cork, as Teague had said, thrust quite into the Muzzle of it. Well, Sir, said his Master, and is the other in the same Condition at this? Upon my Shoul is it reply'd the Servant, for ash day are both Brothers, and dangerons Shubjests, I did take what Care I could dat day should not do me no Harm. And de great End is as good to frighter a Highwayman wid, as de little one, and better too.

Neither the Gentleman nor Silvius could forbear smiling at the poor Irishman's simple Proceedings; but before they could get off the Strings to know whether they were primed, or not, &c. the two- Chaifes appeared before them, not far off, which obliged him to return them to the honest Irishman, in the same Fetter'd Condition, left the Enemy should bolt upon them, before they were aware When the Chaifes came up, they demanded of them, if they had heard of any Highwaymen upon that Road? Upon which, one of them that fat in the first Chaife, having before feen Silvius return, and being now come forwards, with the Addition of two more Companions, made D 3 little

P

0

i

f

(

little Doubt, but that they might all belong to the fame Gang. 'And therefore reply'd, Perhaps, Gentlemen, you may be better acquainted what Number may be upon this Road than we are, (for I think I saw you just in Sight, fome time ago) but we have had, however, a very sufficient Proof that the Business is not, as yet, entirely extinct .- Why then, Sir, faid Silvius (to the Gentleman, now in his Company) my Conjecture I find was not ill grounded. No, Sir; return'd the Gentleman, with much referved Gravity, and perhaps no more may not mine, neither. And fo faying, he rode on without further Speech. This unexpected Behaviour threw our young Hero into a very great Consternation; but soon met with a Relief; for upon his demanding of the People in the Chaife, what they had loft? one of them answer'd; Be it little or much, Sir, I suppose you hope to have your Share on't. This Replication was quite sufficient to open the Eyes, or rather the Understanding, of our aftonish'd Hero: Who, now, could be no longer ignorant that they all of them fupposed him to be one of the Collectors Gang; and that the Gentleman, by his last Behaviour, had interpreted their Infinuation from the Chaife into the fame Meaning. This right Construction of their Words fo highly nettled him, that he reply'd

II:

to

er-

nt-

an

ht,

er,

ot,

id

1-

1-

h

re

e

-

0

h

f

reply'd-By G-d Gentlemen, you are a Parcel of uncharitable and diffruftful Wretches! And whatever you have loft, I wish you Joy of it with all my Heart and Soul. And fo faying he clapt Spurs to his Horse, and rid on asfast as he well could. And this Speed he put on, for two Reasons: In the first Place, he was every Moment in Danger of being vifited by the same Plunderers; and Secondly, he thought it both his Duty and Interest to clear. himself from all Suspicions which the Gentleman might have entertain'd to his Difadvantage. But he was no fooner arriv'd, with more good Speed than Welcome, within a few Lengths of his Servant's Horse, but the Gentleman faced about, and instantly drawing a Pistol, bad him to advance a Step further at his Peril. Poor Silvius was quite thunderstruck, at this strange Salute; but being determined to clear himfelf, he pull'd off his Hat, and return'd the Gentleman to this Effect : You'll please to pardon me, Sir, but I find myself under an irrefissible Necessity to clear myself from all the Prejudice you may have contracted against me. convinced, by the Answers I receiv'd, fince you left the Chaifes, that you all suspect me of what Iam as innocent, as I am shockt at the Thought; and you must forgive me, Sir, if I say, you must not depart, until I have given you the utmost D 4 Satisfaction: B' Hasi

Satisfaction of your Errors.—Arab fat ish dat you fay ? You dam'd Rafcal ! reply'd Teague, frant my Maister go forwarde till you have taken any thing from him. Be my Shoul! take dat den! and dat into de Bargain, for a damn Shon of a Whore aft you are - And with these Words, the Poor Iriffman, feeing his Mafter hold his Pistol in his Hand, made not the least Hesitation, but fent both his Piftols at poor Silvius's Head, with all the Force and Fury he was able. And which, if either of them had taken Place, would have put an End to the Dispute in an Instant: But both of them narrowly missing his Head, Teague was now purfuing his Charge with his Whip; and before Silvius knew whereabouts he was, had received a very fevere Lick or two with that, But his Master instantly interpoling, put an End to the Affaults without any further Damage on either Side. As to Silvius, he had but little Regard to the Behaviour of honest Teague; compared to what he felt on Account of his Mafters Suggestion: Who now thought it incumbent upon him to make fome Attonement, or at least an Apology for his Servant's unwarrantable Atack. Silvius was eafily pacify'd on that Score; but took abundance of Pains to improve the Gentleman's Conftruction of his Character. At laft, after many Importunities on his Side, and alfo, VIX

h det

ague,

taken

den!

of a

ords.

d his

fita-

ius's

ble.

ace,

an

ing

rge

re-

ere

nt-

de. he

at

7:

to

3-

r.

it

-

t

1

alfo, at his own particular Request, it was refolved that Teague and Silvius should both difmount, and to cancel all further Misunderstanding, the Former should make a very regular Search of the Latter, for Fire-Arms, &c. Which being over, to the intire Satisfaction of both Parties; they address'd each other with the warmest Complements imaginable; after which they fought for Teague's Piftol's; which being found, they put them into Order, and loaded them. And now, as they travelled on together, Silvivs, in order to give the Gentleman still a clearer Demonstration of his late Mistakes, began to entertain him with some of his past Adventures; but they had scarce entered into a Chain of Conversation, before they were interrupted by the Appearance of the two aforefaid Highwaymen, whom Silvius knew again, instantly. Upon which they immediatediately held a Council of War; wherein it was refolved, that if they were attack'd, they would defend themselves; and also that Silvius and Teague should that Moment change Horses; the Latter's being much better than the Former's; and that they should conceal their Fire-Arms. till fuch Time that they should have Reason to imagine all danger of an Attack was over fromthese two present Men in Question. This was immediately put in Execution; and to deceive the Dis Highwaymen .

h

i

f

I

Highwaymen, if they should approach them, they unbuckled their Holffers, and put them, Housings and all, under the Flap of trufty Teague's Cloak-bag: Which, with the Saddle to it, was also exchanged for that of Silvius's. So that we may fay, Teague and Silvius only changed Horses. And this was scarcely accomplished, and all were remounted, before the Highwaymen had put themselves in Motion towards them: For they had taken Post upon an Eminence a little out of the High Road, to look for Prey. Silvivs had now taken the front Place, merely out of a Point of Honour, because the Gentleman had so lately doubted of his Character; and they had not long jogg'd on together, before he had the Opportunity he wish'd, to prove his Integrity. For, with an inward Pleafure, he foon faw them on each fide the Tract, with Vizers on their Faces. This was a Declaration of their Design sufficient, and consequently put them in readiness to receive them. The first, pass'd by Silvius to attack the Gentleman; while the other struck into the same Tract before him; and no sooner had he faluted him with the usual Phrase, Stand and Deliver; but our determined Hero obey'd his Demand to a Tittle. For the Words were fcarce ont of his Lips, before he complemented him with a Brace of Balls quite through his

VII.

iem.

em,

ufty

ddle

us's.

ylac

om-

the

tion

pon

to

ont

be-

of

on

he

an

ach

es.

ffi-

s to

at-

ick

ner

ind

v'd.

ere

nt-

gh

nis

his Head, with these Words-There, Sir, take it and welcome! Upon which, and feeing him fall from off his Horse, the Irishman roared out, with great Joy-Upon my Shoul! but he ish a very good Mark man !- This fudden and unexpected Explosion so alarm'd his Companion, that he clapt Spurs to his Horse, and without attempting any thing upon the Gentleman, rode peaceably by him. But the rapturous Behaviour of honest Teague so provok'd him, that he presented his Pistol at his Head as he past by him: Which the Irishman observing, he made a full Cut at him with his long. Whip; and that Instant the Pistol went off, then dropt out of the Highwayman's Hand, and happily did him no harm, But Silvius no fooner perceiv'd he had hit his Mark, but he turn'd about his Horse, threw down his difcharged Pistol, and put the other to his utmost Speed; who looking over his Shoulder, and feeing himfelf purfued, was forc'd to whip and fpur with all the Force he could. This Chace was followed with fo much Refolution, that in a very few Minutes they overtook and past the aforesaid Chaises; upon the full Stretch: but the Highwayman's Horfe, being now quite borne down and overpower'd by his Purfuer, dropt down upon the Road, and threw his Rider quite over his Head. This Misfortune had like:

like to have caused the same to poor Silvius who being very near them, had much ado to fave his Horfe from tumbling also over them. But now the poor Fellow, being thereby extremely bruifed, and quite difarm'd and unhorf ed, was forced to yield himself a Prisoner to victorious Silvius: Who had just bound his Hands behind him, and was now returning with him, when the two Chaifes came up, who were indeed no less surpriz'd than overjoy'd at the extraordinary Accident. But when they began to enlarge upon the great Courage and Prowefs of the Victor, Silvius his Answer them as much abash'd; by only saying-Well, Gentlemen, d'you think now, I shall be any Gainer by their Booty? However, continued he, if you think proper to return, and hear this Prifoner examin'd before a Magistrate; you may very likely recover what they have taken from you: For his Partner, I believe, will not oppose your Claim. In short, when they all resurned, they found him dead, and Teague exceeding witty and joyful over his Carcafe, But when they were arrived to the next Public. vide in apose, and that they had fent for two or three the Gentleman who had Lembarles, &c. thus stood the Attack, declared himfelf in the Commission of the Peace for that County. And therefore, to go the nearest Way, he took down when

when burage in fwer Well, e any ed he, is Primay from top-

ex-But blic.

had the And

wn

down the Examination of all those Persons who had been robb'd as before, in the two Chaifes; as also the Deposition of Silvius and his own Servant. And then, having first search'd the Prisoner, he order'd the Landlord to take care of their Horses and Arms, and then committed him to his Majesty's next Prison. This being done, Silvius and the Justice received the glad. Thanks and Complements of all prefent, for the great Service they had thus done their Country. For these very Fellows had been a great Pest to that Part of it, for a long Time. And Silvius was fo well pleased that Teague had escaped shot-free; and also, with the two Instances of his Courage, that he promised him, if the Prisoner he had taken, should be convicted at the Affizes, he would refign all. Right to any Reward on that Account, to honest Teague. Upon which he reply'd-And upon my Shoul, den, if they don't convict him, and hang him too, now dey have him; it is pity but de Judge and de Sheriff too, should be rob'd by dish Fellow and his dead Companion, de first Time dey come dish Road, that it ish.

As to the Justice (who was an eminent Merchant in the City) he now grew so highly pleased with the Company and Conversation of our young Hero, that he would by no Means Part with him till he came to London; where

he

C

be

de

W

TIC

he

be

g

t

I

he gave him a repeated Invitation to come and take a Dinner with him, as often as he pleafed. And if he had not found an unexpected Change in his own Affairs, as we shall by and by shew, which put the Improvement of this short Acquaintance out of Practice, it is not impossible but that the Success of this Accident might, hereafter, have contributed to the Advantage of his suture Fortune.

CHAP. VII.

Wherein Captain Oldnall delivers to Rofetta a brief Account of himself and Family; and how he came to enter the
Merchants Service. A very interesting
Proposition is made to Silvius: Which
by him is very thankfully approved, and
accepted of.

Room from the Captain and his Lady, but the luckily bethought herfelf as follows: This young Fellow's natural Principles and Passion for this young Lady are so generous and noble, that I must own I am sincerely concerned for them both, I measure their Anxieties by my own inward Impulse; for I consess to you, Mr. Oldnall, that if my own Fortune had not

been

II.

ind

ed.

ed

nd

nis.

ot

nt

1-

been fufficient to have supported us independent of the Seas, I should have been very wretched in the Reflection. And as I doubt not but that he will take the first Opportunity he can to follow her, methinks it would be better for him, (if he should be so inclined) to go over again in your Ship; than to pay an extravagant Price to a Stranger ; and his being there upon the Spot before her, may perhaps be rather an Advantage to his Purpose than an Injury. But pray Madam, faid the Captain. how fland his Finances? In Case of his Disappointment there, has he wherewithal to fupport any tolerable Interval till he can return? Oh, Dear! Yes, Sir, reply'd Rosetta, I know of five Hundred Pounds, if not more Money, that he can command in half an Hour's Time, of his own proper Right. Why then. Madam, answer'd the Captain, I have a thought occurs to me, that may, perhaps, happily crown his Fortune; and to introduce which Thought, I will now, Madam, with your Permission (as is also now my Duty) just give you some little Account of myself.

My Father, Madam, after a long and faithful Service in the Navy, was by Degrees advanced to a very eminent Rank, as a Commander: And I being his favourite Son, he brought brought me up, under his own Care and In. fpection, to the same Element; but very unfortunately for me, in an Engagement in the late War, he loft his Life. Lwas then about Twenty Years of Age, a Midshipman on board the same Ship; and had the unspeakable Af-Miction to fee my dear and precious Father dash'd to Pieces before my Face with a Cannonthot. But I will not trouble you, Madam. with an Attempt to describe my Woes at that fatal and aggravating Stroke; which Remembrance will ever be dreadful to me, as well as my Lofs. I came home in the fame Ship fome Time after, and believing myself qualified for that Office, I accordingly pass'd my Examination for a Lieutenant. After I had got my Certificate of Qualifications, I apply'd myfelf to my Friends for their Interest and Affistance to gain me a Warrant. I did not, indeed, pre. fume on the Merit of my Father's Death and Service to advance me, for I really thought that fuch a Pretence was scarcely warrantable; but I had Vanity enough to imagine that my own former Behaviour and Qualifications were fafficiently known to Answer my Pretence. But, alas-aday! Madam, the first * L of Ch

the

San

fon

his

go

vů

elf

th

A

pe

W

VE

S

H

V

E

il

i

Tis very evident that this Part of our History was not written of late Days.

In.

un-

the

Dout

oard

Af-

ther

on-

m,

that

m-

as

me

for

na-

er-

to

to

re.

nd

ht

;

y

re

e.

of

t'

the A-y hardly knew a Sailer from od Sand-Cart; and had no more Regard to a Perion's Merit, and long Service, than he had to his own Want of common Understandingand good Manners. He was remarkably haughty! vulgar and vociferous! And indeed, had little else to recommend him to any Place of Trust? than his Titles and Estate. Being weary of Attendance and Cringing to Persons who were perhaps more a Difgrace than an Ornament, as well to their Office as their Country, I refolved to give over all further Solicitation on that Score: And having a little Fortune in my own. Hands, which was left me by my Father's last Will, at the Advice of my Relations and Friends, I bought myself a Vessel, and enter'd into Contract with feveral worthy Merchants in the Portugal Trade. And I had been four very fortunate Voyage, Madam, before that auspicious Moment wherein I first beheld your lovely Face. And in which Fortune, please to give me leave to fay, Madam, that I am infinitely more happy than I should be in the chief Command of a British Fleet; or, the Possesfion of all the Riches of the Indies could poffibly make me, without you. Now, Madam, what I would propose for this young Gentleman, your Steward, is this: I have a near Relation.

fter

art

Caj

in

W

P

p

lation, and a very fober careful young Fellow who was also brought up in the Service of the Navy, but having no eloquent M*** P*** to back his Interest, I have advised him to follow my Example. And as I know him to be a very able Seaman, if it meets with your Approbation, Madam, and Mr. Greenland's Confent; as you have been pleased to bless me with a better Fate, we will make them Copartners in this most fortunate Vessel (for) must, indeed, call her so) together. And this I will affure them, that they shall rather have her two Hundred Pounds under her real Value, than pay one fingle Shilling too much. Mr. Watson, for that is the young Gentleman's Name, will confequently have the Command of the Ship; but Mr. Greenland's going over in her, in the Quality of an Owner, will cer tainly put him upon a very genteel and creditable Footing; and perhaps may contribute towards expediting his defires with the young Lady with the more Facility; and with whom I wish him the greatest Happiness.

This Proposition was fo highly approved and recommended by Rosetta, that Silvius was immediately made acquainted therewirh: And, it also meeting with his ready and thankful Concurrence, the whole Affair was the next Day

after,

of his Lorents, if any

fter, adjusted, to the entire Satisfaction of all arties.

CHAP. VIII.

Captain Watson and Silvius proceed in their Voyage; with some Account of what afterwards happened to them.

CILVIUS having now purchased one half. of the Ship Lovely; and the other half being confign'd to Captain W. Watson; they were very bufily employ'd in fome necessary. Preparations for their Voyage: Which for the Present a good deal contributed to divert the gloomy Anxieties of our embarras'd Silvius. However, he went every Day, while he remained in London, to the General-Post-Offices n quest of Letters from his dear Angelica. Nor had he omitted the transmitting an Account of his good Fortune, by the Generofity of his young Lady, to his Father and to Mr. R. Wilul; who doubtless were not a little satisfied with this confiderable Instance of the Goodness of Providence. After Captain Oldnall had introduced the two Owners of the Lovely to the Merchants, and Owners who were concern'd in her Freight, and had done every Thing for their

ellow.

of the

w him

ed to

(for l this have

Mr. an's

and

er dito-

dy

ed as

1,

7

their mutual Interest, that lay in his Power he kindly offered his voluntary Service to Si at vius, to take care of his Letters, if any thou happen to come to the Post-Office after h Departure; which be having thankfully as proved of, and fettled every other Point as i as he faw convenient, they once more weigh her Anchor for Lifbon, without his being ab to hear one Syllable farther from the diving buil Angelica:

As Silvius was now become a Person of Bull nefs, and fome little Confequence in the Mari time Way, he resolved to dedicate all his Time and Thoughts, while he was on board, toward the Acquisition of some Knowledge of the Dut of a Sailor. In which Undertaking his worth Friend and Partner Captain Wat son readily gave him his Affistance. And they happen'd w prove very agreeable Companions to each ther.

In about twenty Days from the Time they left London, they fafely arrived at Lifton; where to the great Mortification of poor Silving, he could hear neither Tale nor Fidings of the fair Idol of his Heart, more than they had be fore informed him of, the last Time he was have an expected for the stand

अस्तात्रका वीस्तात्र विद्यामध्यक्ष रहतात्र (रहा

But

Bu

ent

es

fo

lf

ad

fan

if

e

r

p

u

iı

b ŀ

Rut Powe to Si thou !

F Bufe

Mari Time ward.

Dut orth gave

dito h o

13319 they Bons

vius, the

be W25 .

But

But now a most fortunate unfortunate Ac. ent happened to arise, which perhaps produdas.strange a Variety of extreme Viciffitudes ever attended any one Man in the Compass fter has fo short a Time. Their Loading was scarce lly a lif out of the Ship, before a Proposition was as i made to Captain Watson, by a Person, in the weight same of some of the King of Portugal's Comng ab iffioners, that as the Ship Lovely was a well divinithilt, clean, good Vessel; and a prime Sailor, ey would make it worth the Owners while to arry a fmall Freight and an especial Express to particular Part of the Brafils, in the Service f the King. That it was an Affair of Confeuence, and required the utmost Dispatch imainable. The Captain and Silvius having inormed themselves of the best Terms they could btain for the Performance of this Expedition; and also gain'd the best Counsel and Advice hey could concerning it; they came to an Agreement; and began to prepare for their Departure with all the Haste and Care imaginable. Silvius, having a natural Inclination to be acquainted with new Adventures, and especially as he had hereby a Prospect to improve his Fortune with all the Accommodations and Privileges he could defire, was highly pleafed with the Prospect of this Voyage: in which we shall pass over all slight Occurrences, and immediately

. 8

W

tha

nan

alt

ofe

- 1

Tatt

ith

an

ze

d a

er.

s s

Mi

fi

as

XC

he

is

b

h

a

diately come to fuch remarkable Events as an most likely to be thought worthy the Regard of the Reader. They had very happily the favourable Assistance of the Elements, from their first setting Sail, to the very Port they were bound to, having very fortunate Winds, and good Weather, most part of the Way. But, oh! heavy Change! Now must we leave the propitious Recordings of our worthy Hero, and, for almost the remaining Part of this History, proceed to Copy the very Words of his own future Journal; which was written by himself, as follows:

(From the Journal of Captain SILVIUS GREENLAND.)

the King. That it was an

A LTHOUGH I have felt the feverest Pangs of disappointed and embarras'd Love; and other very very grievous Moments, which were never known but to myself, yet, were my past Anxieties all accumulated together, to form one horrid Hour, could they not compare, with any propriety, to what I am now to record. And perhaps it is what I have too well deserved, by my not setting a sufficient Value on those great Blessings which Heaven had so bountifully bestowed upon me before.

We

as ate We had a pleafant and prosperous Voyage egand that Part of the Brafils which we were coe far manted to, for the Service of the King of their Pringal; all Things well, and the Crew in were Balth: But scarce were we ready to leave and ofe pleafant Shores, and had gotten our pro-But, per Acquittances, and other Instruments and the Matters on board, but to begin our Misfortunes and, with Weight, my dear Friend! Partner! Comory, ander, Counsellor and Companion! was wized with a Malignant Fever; which in fpight all the Affistance we could possibly adminier, in about three Days Time, deprived us of his future comfortable Help. At this irreparable Loss, I shall date the first Hour of my real Misery, for we had contracted so great, and so finterested a Friendship for each other, that I as almost broken down to Death itself, with xceffive Grief! And to aggravate my Anguish he more for his dear fake, if possible, he made is Will, and notwithstanding all I could urge to the contrary; though I affured him that I hould not have done the fame by him; he alled in the Mate and feveral others of the Ship's Company, and defiring their Testimony to the ame, constituted me his sole Executor. This reat Proof of his true Regard for me, only idded to the Burden of my Woe; because I could not have a greater Demonstration of his real

wn felf,

113

US

ini eft

s'd

te,

et,

0-

ev.

I

I

8

h

e

F

p

0

I

1

real Love and Friendship for me. Being now the fole Proprietor of the Ship, I appointed niv Mate, who was a very worthy Man, the Mafter and Commander of her; because J was not qualified for that Office and Charge myfelf. But although he accepted of the Charge of the Vessel, he absolutely refused the customary Appellation of Captain, while I was on board her; so that this Honour was now conferr'd upon me. But if my Grief was inconfolable for the Loss of my worthy and agreeable Friend, I was foon convinced that my Prefumption in complaining so loud and bitterly at the Dealings of the all-wife Will of Providence, was indeed the weak and inconfiderate Foible of my Nature; in that I did not reflect, how much by the same Divine Power my Afflictions might be increased. For this Stroke, grievous as it now feemed, was but a small Specimen of what I soon after suffered.

Having got every Thing ready for our Return, we again weigh'd Anchor for the defirable Port of Liston; and wish'd now a Thousand Times that I had never left it, so that I had saved my Friend. For, now began a dreadful Scene indeed! Being on the tenth Day of our Return; about eight in the Morning, with very little Wind; we were hastily alarm'd by the Prognostication of one of our Fore-

VII

now

inted

, the

ufe I

harge

narge usto-

as on con-

con-

ree-

my

ter-

Pro-

nfi-

not

wer

this

t a

uf-

le-

de-

2

fo

an

th

n-

ly

ur

e-

Foremast-men; who having been an old experienced Sailor, and often in those Latitudes. by the sudden Appearance and Increase of an ominous Cloud, foretold the dreadful and immediate Succession of a violent and certain Storm. Though my Commander, whose Name was John Richardson, as well as most of our Hands, had never before experienced the Effect of fuch an alarming Portention, as having never been before in these Climes; yet, had they all of them heard too much of them from divers others who had fufficiently tafted of them, to let this pass neglected. Therefore all Hands were now at Work in half a Minute's Time with their utmost Power and Spirits: But as expeditious as we were in furling all our Sails. and light'ning her aloft, the Wind increasing every Moment, we scarcely had accomplish'd what we were about, before the Tempest began to fhew its horrid Force. In lefs than a quarter of an Hour from the Sailors first Warning the bright and distant Horison was contracted to a dark and near Confinement; the Winds began to roar! The Sea feem'd troubled! The Clouds hung low, black and gloomy! And the whole Prospect round us, was too frightful for Description! But, Oh! Mighty God! If this aftonishing Change was now fo tremendous, how much more horrible was it in a Vol. III. E few

CI

Sk

ine

T

t

C

T

7

few Minutes after! When the first impetuous Burst of this most furious Storm began its Rage! The threatning Winds had beat the Compass round, with fuch Rapidity and Force, as though it had fearched and driven all the Horrors of the Skies into a purposed Conflict to shake weak Nature to a total Diffolution! At length, the direful Work begun. A flash of fiery Light. ning dash'd upon the Sea, which seemed to fhew all Nature in a Flame! When instantly a Peal of fuch diffracting Thunder eccho'd through our Ears, as threatened us (as it were that very Moment into separate Atoms! The Rain immediately join'd the Thunder's Roar (but came not down like Britain's temperate showers) the whole Heavens feem'd to have open'd their mighty Gates, and pour'd out Floods sufficient to destroy us with their Weight Soon after this Hurricane began, the Sea began to tumble, foam and roar! And the tumultious Winds continuing, or rather increafing their Force, we broke our Tiller by endeavouring to flay the Ship. Now we found ourselves at the Mercy of the Waves, and driving before the Winds in a most furious and perilous Manner. The Ship gathered in the Water a-pace, and notwithflanding all this Horror of the Storm, we were obliged to work the Pumps with all our Strength and Skill;

Skill; otherwise, we should have perish'd, inevitably all together.

CHAP. IX.

The Storm continues, whereby the Ship is in fuch eminent Danger, that the Captain determines to quit her; and to that End, devises a very remarkable Machine to preserve his own Life.

THEN I found the Storm continue, (tho' indeed the Rain was much abated) that the Ship was creeky; and her Leaks increafed, and the whole Crew almost spent with pumping, and other hard Labour, in endeavouring to withstand the Tempest and weather it out, I began finally to confider within myfelf for fome probable Method to prolong my poor Life, which now flood in very great Peril, fome few Days longer, if possible: And after deviling a great Number of Schemes, which, upon a little Examination, appearing with fome Deficiency, they vanished as fast as they arose. At length it pleased Providence to posfess me with the following Invention, which through the great Mercy of Heaven, after much fuffering, happily fucceeded.

E 2

Finding

ough rs of weak , the

VII.

uous lage!

npas

d to antly ho'd

ight-

The oar lerate

out ight. be-

iniller we aves.

rious d in this

l to and cill: Finding all my People dishearten'd by our dreadful Prospect, which promifed nothing but almost immediate Death, I took an half Anchor of Brandy, and calling the poor Fellows to me. after exhorting them to trust in the Mercy of the Almighty, either for Life or Death, and for the future, to think of nothing but the latter, during the few remaining Moments which they might possibly have yet to come; I deliver'd to them the Brandy; faying-Here my Lads, take each of you a hearty Glass of it: But be fure take care of drinking too much; because, if the Ship should at last become a Wreck, a wholesome Draught of this may fo far enliven you, as perhaps to lay hold of fome Part of her that may be a Means of working your Preservation. But if you should take too much of it; you thereby will become incapable of doing any Thing to help your felves.

So after they had each of them drank a very fufficient Quantity, they now feem'd, as it were, inspired with new Life; and this chearful Effect was what I apprehended would be the Case; and which exactly answer'd my View, because without such a Proceeding, had I proposed to them the least Attempt for my own Security, without a general Benefit by it, to the same End, they would perhaps much rather have joined to have thrown me overboard,

VII.

y our

ng but

nchor

me,

cy of

and

the

nents

me;

ng-

earty

king

- laft

this

hold

s of

ould

ome

ves.

k a

as

this

uld

my

had

my

it.

ich

er-

re,

board, than to have put a Hand towards swing me, on fingle Terms. Therefore, having now, by the Effect of the Brandy, wrought them to a proper Care for my Purpose; I demanded of the Carpenter who was the properest Person I could on this Occasion apply to; if he would drive a couple of Nails for me, into a Piece of Timber as I should direct him; and that I would then take my Chance in the raging Sea, dreadful as it was, and leave them likewife (but with the Affistance of the Ship's Boats, which I would leave for their general Advantage) to contrive the best they could for their future Hope. The Capenter reply'd-Sir, I'll do any Thing in my Power either to oblige or ferve you with all my Heart; but then, I hope you will also let me take my Chance along with you.

This was indeed, what I fear'd; but as my Contrivance could not possibly admit of a Companion, which otherwise I should have been glad of, I was obliged to dissemble my Intention, and consent (seemingly) to his Request. Accordingly, I got two spare Yards; that is to say, a Spritsail-yard, and a Topsail-yard; and nailing a Piece of stout Oak at each Ender to brace them well together, at the Distance of about sour Foot from each other; I also took two good new Ropes, and passing them several

E 3 Times

Ch.

hen of B

by it

as to

it co

fore. able

I th

Pro

ly

W

th

C

ōï

it

fa

S

i

Times under and over the Yards near to the Timber-braces, I afterwards woolded them well between with the fame, as tort as we were able: And so made as firm and secure a lashing as was possible in that Time; and indeed very strong it was. After this was compleated, I got a couple of good strong large Hampers, one Size lefs than the other, and having put them one into the other, I work't them well together with a small Cord, which I passed through and through them with all the Skill and Dexterity imaginable; and then I fastened them well down athwart the two Yards, amidships, staying them also with good Cordage, all round, from the Edges of them to the Braces. And which, when done, appeared indeed a very odd kind of a Vehicle: And which my Readers may now judge of as well as myfelf.

After I had fecured every Part of it to my Satisfaction, which was all done in less than a quarter of an Hour's Time, I put into it, about half a Dozen of dry'd Cod-fish, well tied together; and also fastened them to the Lashings of my Hampers; a small Bottle-Case filled with the best Liquors and Cordial-waters (which I proposed for my Seat as well as my Cellar) and a couple of small Pieces of Hang'd-Beef; which was all the Provisions that I could

then

II.

the

vell

ere

fh-

eed

1,1

n.

ur

ell

ed

ill

d

1.

11

then think of carrying with me. For any kind of Bread would have been wash'd to naught, by its continual Immersions in the Sea. But as to my dry'd Cod and Beef, I imagined that it could not very much Damage it; and therefore, with the Nourishment of those two Eatables, and the Assistance of my Cordial-waters I thought to myself, through the Mercy of Providence, I might sustain from absolutely perishing for many Days, and perhaps Weeks.

As for my Hampers, I verily believes it was the happiest Contrivance that any Man in my Condition could possibly ever have pitch'd upon. First, because of its wicker Composition, it was thereby more Covenient for the fafeft fastening to my Frame; that is to say, to the Spritfail and Topfail-yards; in the next Place, it was as proper to receive the Buffets of the Sea, and withstand the innumerable Immersions it was liable to, and which I must expect in this frightful Voyage, as one could defire. Because it was almost as expeditious in evacuating what Water it might receive, as it could be in filling. And then by its flexible Temper, and giving way to every Stroke that opposed it, it was the less liable of being torn to Pieces by. any Thing which might change to ftrike against And by its disengaging itself so easily and naturally

naturally from any Quantity of Water it might receive, made it the more convenient for my little Provisions, as well as my own Body, &c. And laftly, as long as my Wooden-braces and Lashings, which greatly strengthen'd one another, would hold their Place, my little Machine was in no Danger of overfetting; so that as long as I could preferve my Life from Starving, I was in some Hopes of a delivery; for in this Contrivance, (could I once but get fafely into it) drowning was the least of my Fear. But as I had no Rudder, nor Time enough to make me one, I was obliged to content myfelf with the Chance of trusting to the various Currents of the Sea, which are always govern'd by the Wind ; for in the open Sea there are no Tides; fo that which foever Way the Winds blow, the Current rolls before it. Whereby it was very possible, by the Winds chopping about to the opposite Point of the Compass, that I might be driven back the next Day, the very fame Path that I had swam the Day before.

But having now compleated my new small invented Bark, which took up all my Time, my Thoughts, and my whole Business, from the very Moment that I first thought of it, till its final Completion; I was now very busy in getting ready my little Sea-store, and had nothing in this World at Heart, for the present,

but

bu

pe

Se

di

P

a

0

u

I

ght

my

nd ·

10-

aat

ror

y

as

e

e

e

but the Saving of my Life, when the poor Carpenter addressed me thus:

Well, Sir, although the Heavens and the Sea, at this Moment, feem so horrible and dreadful to behold; and that we have little Prospect at present, but of perishing one Way or the other; for look backwards, or forwards, or on either Side, Death feems ready to receive us: The Vessel cannot possibly be of many Hours, if many Minutes, Continuance; and though this odd Instrument we are going to venture upon, promises us, at present, no very great Prospect of Preservation, considering all its Inconveniencies, and Deficiencies; yet something whispers me (although in the midst of this most dangerous Situation) that Heaven will preserve us to see Old England, once a-And when I look in your Face, Sir, I am ftrength' ned the more in this pleafing Opinion; because, methinks, your Countenance is really more chearful than our present unhappy Condition gives you cause for .-

Just at that Instant our poor Vessel gave such a dreadful Crack, as threaten'd no less than an immediate Separation: And though the poor Carpenter's Discourse gave me great Pleasure and Spirits to hear him; yet, this sudden Shock of our Ship instantly banish'd every

E 5

fingle

hi

fte

ot

m

W

h

fr

(

p

t

fingle Wordhe had utter'd, from my Thoughts. So that now, I was in the utmost Impatience to get on Board of our new built Skiff, though the Storm still continued so incessantly heavy, that it was a frightful Reflection, to think of launching into the open Sea, dreadful and raging as the Heavens and the Waters at this Time appeared to us. But the poor Carpenter being now warn'd by the fame threatening Summors, feem'd as haftily alarm'd as myfelf. So that now, all other Thoughts afide, we were instantly, both Hands at it; and all our aforefaid Provisions being put into the Hampers to the best Advantage, it was agreed between the Carpenter and myfelf, that I should have the first Spell in the Baskets; and that he should fit, either before me, or behind me, (as he should conceive best) on a Board which he had nail'd at each of these Places, a cross the Booms for that Purpose. And where he was to continue lash'd fast about the Body to the Hampers, to prevent his being wash'd off by the Sea; and then, with the first Opportunity, we were to exchange Births, but we had no fooner got her into the Sea, on the Leefide of the Ship (of course) and I was got into her, but, just as the Carpenter was pulling her on board for the same Purpose, I roar'd out to him

ts.

ce

gh

y,

of

bi

is.

r

e

him (for he held the * Painter which was fasten'd to our Machine, in his Hand, and the other End of which I had made fast on board me, to let go at Pleasure) but I say, just as he was coming over the Ship's Side, I roar'd out to him that I had forgot a two Gallon Keg of fresh Water, which stood ready at the great Cabbin Door; and that we should inevitably perish without it.

The poor Carpenter immediately turn'd about to bring me the Keg of Water, as I defir'd him, and that Moment I fet myfelf adrift; for in fact I had already got that same Bottle of Water with me in the Hampers. And the Moment I flipt the Painter, I roar'd out to the poor Fellows on board, and ftriking my Hands together as loud as I could-My dear Boys! Farewell! Farewell! And may the Almighty God preferve your precious Souls, dead or alive! But I was inftantly drove so far from the Ship, that I could not discover what Anfwer they made me; or if any at all.

My Readers must observe, that though the Ship's Crew all knew of my Preparing this Machinefor my last Shift; not one of them imagined that I should offer to leave them till the very last Moment that the Ship could fwim a-

A Rope with which they fasten the Boats to the Ship.

Ch

Pro

As

COI

and

the

or

no H

po

P

bove Water. And indeed it may feem highly reasonable that I should have done so. But perhaps they may change their Opinion, when I have informed them that the Ship might poffibly, and very probably, have funk downright in an Instant, and thereby have render'd it Impractible for me to reap any Chance of Benefit from this my new Invention. And again, should I have stay'd on board amongst my Men till the last Moment, I could not possibly thereby have administer'd the least Good or Comfort to them imaginable. And it must still add to my own Danger. For although all the Ship's Company had proposed some Device or other for their last Chance (as well as having both the Ship's Boats amongst them, which I had pretended to compliment them with, in order to divert them from forming any Defign of depriving me of the Use of my Scheme) yet, had I stay'd amongst them till the Hurry of the last Moment; it is not to be supposed, that when all their Lives lay that Inftant at stake, they would have stood on the least Ceremony with me; but the first that could have jump'd into the Hamper, would have put to Sea with it, and have thought himself happy in so good a Change.

And therefore, my Business was not to trust to any such Peril. And again, should I have taken the Carpenter along with me, according to my

Promise;

Promise; I had, as much to dread that Way: As I had neither Sail nor Rudder, I was in consequence obliged to submit to the Course and Mercy of the Waters, as well as not being able to carry a Sufficiency of Provisions; and therefore, being at least, as it happen'd, sixty or seventy Leagues from Land; though we did not know that we were so near to any, by an Hundred and Fifty, it could have been no wise political in me to have Hazarded a Companion.

CHAP. X.

Containing the Captain's most perilous and tremendious Situation; and what divine Reslections he mady choice of to comfort himself.

BEING now put off from the Ship, and driving furiously before the Wind; I shall leave my reflecting Readers to judge of the poor disappointed Carpenter's Astonishment and Despair, when he saw me thus adrist; and not the least Possibility of my returning. The Rage of the Sea and Storm was now equal, if not surpassing the most horrible and shocking Comprehension. The Wind blew a perfect Hurricane; the Rain fell like Cataracts; and the Thunder roar'd in so dreadful a Manner, that none but

CI

lef

ed

ex

be

W

n

7

t

e

-

but those who have passed those Seas, or near the Line, can possibly conceive. The Lighting too was equal to the Terror of the Thunder; and the mountainous and soaming Snrges of the Waters bore an answerable Aspect to the angry Face of Heaven.

In this frightful Plight did I bid adieu to my poor diffres'd Ship and Shipmates; all which, by the Mightiness of the Storm, I could not continue within my Sight, but a very few Moments; although I endeavour'd to maintain a View of them to the extreamest Instant. The Thoughts of my own horrid Situation was abfolutely, for this short Space, swallow'd up in my own Reflections of this melancholy and eternal Separation: And the Inftant that I loft Sight of her, and found that I could not again recover it, it is impossible to express my Anguish: The Danger and Horror of the Storm, and my unhappy condition, as to the Peril of my Life, was not to be Compared to the inward Pangs and Workings of my Soul, which I flelt at that I burst into the most lamentable Cries, that can be conceived! I fmote my Breaft, and roar'd out my most solemn and earnest Invocations to Heaven, with all the Force that the most contrite, and almost broken Heart could And I was fo fenfibly diffracted with my own Thoughts, that the dreadful Storm around

VII.

near

ting

er;

the

gry

my

ch,

not

10-

na.

he

ıb-

ny

r-

ht

e-

h:

y

2,

SS

It

e

ł

around me, tremendous as it was, was yet less shocking to me, than that which I felf within.

This Conflict continued in my poor diffracted Mind till I was quite exhaufted with my inexpressible Grief. And Death, me thought, began to be much less frightful to me now, than when I left the Ship; though my Danger was not as yet, in the least increased, and the elapsed Time fo very fhort. And then again, when I came to reflect what a small Chance I had of ever being taken up by any Ship; and of the confined narrow Spot I was cooped up in, to linger out the remainder of my Life, which I could not now but imagine must be a long and miserable Decline; made me conclude, that those poor Wretches, which by this Time might be no more; were, through the Mercy of Heaven, more happy than myself. After fome fmall Time spent in this piteous Condition, which I may suppose was about half an Hour, from the Time I departed from my Ship; I began to be extremely fick; and fo over-power'd with my Grief and my Illness together, that I could scarcely suffain myself upright in the Hampers: And which, with the violent Motion of the Sea, render'd me quite incapable of having any Affistance from my Cordials in the Bottle-case. So that I was obliged to submit

Ch

vice

all

ha

cor

ries

the

th

fer

fh

th

fir

th

th

h

b

f

e

to the Oppression of my Grief and Illness; though I had a Remedy so near me, that (could I but safely have reach'd it) might have administred to me some present Relief. But this I say could not be effected.

Now, Reader, who or whatfoever thou art, that Readest these Passages for the Amusement of thy Mind; remember that thou art hereby admonish'd to make such Use of them as will anfwer thy true Interest. And which is the very End and Intention of our troubling thee with these painful Pages. If thou be'ft a Perfon who aboundeth with Plenty; having Servants to do thy Command, and nothing but thy own Will to confult, and then to enjoy thy (perhaps luxurious) Defires; then, when thou meetest with any trifling thing to cross thy Temper; or, in the least, to disturb thy utmost Tranquility; suspend thy gloomy Frowns for one Moment, and cast back an advantageous Reflection on what our poor unhappy Sailors before us suffer, and compare their dreadful and most miserable Situation to your own. If then, the Breaking of a China-cup; or the Boiling of an Egg to a hard; or the Difappointment of a Ball, or a Play; or, the Payment of a small Sum of Money, can wrinkle thy Brow, or raise one fingle Moment's Uneafiness in thee; then is this good Labour and Ad-

vice,

H.

fs ;

uld

ni-

I

rt.

of

d-

n-

ne

e-

-

.

t

vice, all thrown away upon thee; as well as all these earthly Bleffings, which Heaven may have so graciously posses'd thee of. But if thou would'it truly benefit by another's Lois; compare thy present Advantages, to these Miseries, which thou fee'ft here fet down before thee; and then make an impartial Enquiry of thyfelf, wherein thou can'ft difcern thy own Difervings to be fo wonderous great; that Heaven should decree this mighty Difference. And when thou comest to reckon, on the Ballance; and findest thy own Reason deficient for the Cause; thou may'ft add this small Account of our's That it is not thy own Merit which thereto. hath drawn these manifold Bleffings upon thee: but that it is the wonderful Bounty and Pleafure of Heaven: Who, as fure as thou livest, expects from thee some grateful Return in the Use of them: Even something more than an idle Vanity in the Study and Pursuit of Dress Such as an humble and fincere and Pleafures. Duty towards your Omnipotent Creator: And your most charitable Thoughts and Actions towards all your fellow Creatures: For be you ever so high born, ever so finely deck'd, or ever fo vain of your own Beauty, Fortune, Understanding, or Genius; any of these sublime Points will weigh but very lightly when poized in the Scale of found Philosophy. And so leaving you to make what Use you please of this Digression, we shall now return to our History.

CHAP. XI.

Containing the Captain's first six Days.

Voyage in his Wicker Bark.

BEING by my above-mentioned Afflictions much spent, and incapable of moving, or changing my Position, (any farther than sitting upright, or reclining to the Edge of the Hampers, as best might suit my Ease) I, at length sell into a most solemn and silent Cogitation, submitting my inward and despairing Thoughts to the unfathomable Mercy and Will of divine Providence: And directing all my Thoughts and Senses (inwardly) in my Prayers to Heaven; I continued for some considerable Time absolutely insensible, whither I was, or of any Part of my wretched Condition.

However, when I again awoke, as it were, from my obliviated Trance; I found myself greatly relieved by it; for I had thereby, so effectually resign'd myself to the Divine Wills that I now encouraged but very little Hopes of ever seeing Land again. And having no other Prospect but that of Death before me, I had nothing to divert my Mind from that good Duty which

me So

Ch.

whi

loft

had

all

Ic

Cr

T fli

2

IL

his

Ii-

y5

15

r

g

-

h

which it was now employ'd in. And as I was lost in Person, to the Rest of the World; so had I likewise given up all Thoughts of it. So that I now began within myself, to over-haul all my past Transactions, and to call myself unto a most severe Account for all these Deeds, I could recollect, that deserved the Name of Criminal; and to beg of Heaven his rich and merciful Forgiveness of them. And in which Solicitations I found great Comfort to myspirit. The Sighings of a sincere Repentance in an afficted Sinner, are both grateful to Heaven's high Throne, and an healing Balsam to the Soul.

Oh! that every finfull Man (as the best of us all most certainly are) would but turn his Senses inward, as I did then! and after a strict Examination of his past Misconduct, would suspend his hungry Thoughts of all worldly Gain and Pleasure, for some small Space; and dedicate with the whole Force of his Spirit, those wholesome Breathings of a repenting Sinner; this, I am persuaded, is the only true Confession required from a Christian; and not that empty outside Form, which is taught to the ignorant, credulous Dupe, and Bigot, by the designing Priest. Who, by his base Misguidings, and our easy Credulity, rather help to forward our Damnation, than to extricate us from it.

C

fo

it.

th

th

0

fi

1

1

2

But if this spiritual Offering, afforded me such Confolacion in the midst of this heavy! dreadful! and most frightful Storm; how much more was I relieved, when, almost of a fudden, and at a Time when I had reconciled myfelf to Death and Danger, this gloomy Storm abated? the Thunder ceased to roar; the Lightning was changed from fiery Flashes to Gleans of a more pleafing Light; which now began to shine between the divided Clouds; while the Winds began to moderate, and the Rain in a very short Space, entirely pass'd away. Soon after this joyful Alteration of the Weather, the glorious Sun began to spread his heavenly Beams upon me: Which, methought, administer'd now more blessed Lustre than I had ever beheld before. And which, I also remember, raised in me this Reflection .- O Almighty and Incomprehenfible Father! Who dost by these golden Rays of Light fignify to us, thy unworthy Creatures, the Glory of thy heavenly Majesty. For Ten thousand thoufand millions of Times more than this glorious Luminary is brighter to mortal Eyes, than is the Darkest-night; so much, and more, much more is the Glory of thy Majesty, Brighter than that Gorgeous-ball.

This, and a thousand other such comfortable and refreshing Ideas crouded into my Mind: In-

VH.

me

vy!

uch

fud.

my-

the

to

ds;

the

s'd

he

nis.

ıt,

I

e-

1-

0

o. y.

S

fomuch that almost before I was well aware of it, my Cloaths upon my Back were dry. And the Wind continuing fill to leffen, or rather that it was now become quite calm; I was obliged to unloop my Hat to defend my Face from the Intensity of that glorious Object, which I had so lately, and so greatly wish'd to see But though the Sky was now become ferene. and the Wind was also hush'd; the Sea, as yet, continued its Turbulence. So that I was in no great Eagerness to attempt the Assistance of my Bottle-Case: Which I had not only a very great Inclination to, but also a most certain Need of. But my Vehicle continued yet in fuch a violent Motion, by the vast Rolling of the Waves, that I durst not remove myself from my Seat, upon any Account, (though I so much wanted the Assistance of some of my Bottles) left, I should by the fudden Elevation of a Billow, have been toss'd overboard; and by that weans, have been loft past all Possibility of Prevention.

But however, having now fine pleasant Weather, aboveboard, my Hopes and Despair alternately took Place: When I view'd and well consider'd the Stability and Conveniency of my little Wicker Bark; and that I was tollerably well provided with nourishing Cordials for some Time, my Spirits reviewed: But when I re-

Ch

ver

the

of

ful

ap

tic

ed

pr

p

fe

I

S

flected that I had neither Rudder, Sail, Compass, nor Oar to affift me, my Griefs again in. creafed. At length, I got the better of my Fears, Doubts and Anxieties, by only recol. lecting, and preponderating, that I was now, bad as I thought my Case, in a most blessed Situation, compared to that of my poor endanger'd or perishing Shipmates : And though I flood in need of all the above necessary Materials yet, I was now in the Power of Heaven, only: Drowning I was not afraid of; and fo long as my Cordials and fresh Water would hold out, I was in no very great Danger of immediately perishing through Want. The noctural Dews and Foggs were what I had most to dread: And to prevent a Stagnation of Blood, and Numbness in my Hams, as much as posfible; I unbutton'd my Breeches-knees, and took off my Garters; which greatly refreshed me. And having now, for the first Time, attain'd the Affistance of my friendly-Bottle (which was Rum) I took a good hearty Pull of it; and, I verily believe, drank near a half Pint: But it was fo far from making me fuddled, that I only feem'd inspir'd with new Life: And I both refolved and endeavour'd not to fuffer a desponding Thought to take the least Root in my Mind; for, by my grateful Remembrance, I was fo ftrongly indebted to the divine Providence for this fortunate Deli-

very,

II.

m-

in-

my

ol-

w,

Ted

en-

hI

als

y ;

ny

ras

h-

nd

1:

d,

of-

nd

e-

ft

y-

ty

a

e

V

ot

e

1]

0

,

very from my poor finking Ship, that I rather glory'd in my Hopes, than despair'd

of my Safety.

SixDays and Nights pass'd o'er in a kind of joyful Longing, and not the least Shadow of a Ship appeared, but what my own defiring Imaginations a thousand Times discovered, and vanished foon again. Nothing, in all this Time, presented itself before me, but the alternate Course of Night and Day, which every Hour produced fresh Hopes of some accidental Vesfel appearing to my Deliverance. And though I had no better a Prospect of such a joyful Sight, than I had the first Moment I escaped the Storm, I would by no means encourage, or give way to the least Despair. My Hung-beef flood me in great Service and Comfort; and without my fresh-water Cask, which now was greatly wasted, I had absolutely perish'd; but as Heaven providentially affifted me before, in the extremest Moment; I thought it a Sin, next Blasphemy, to doubt his future Mercy, when it should please his Almighty Hand to stretch forth to my Deliverance. The Sun, Moon, Stars, Clouds and Seas, were all the Companions I had; and I converfed with them in the Language of the Pfalmift, to my inexpressible Satisfaction and Comfort; as my Readers may either fee or avoid, as they shall happen to like in the next Chapter. CHAP.

Ch

ruf

f 1 W

Ho

ola

to

Ey

the

im co

th

bl

is

W

fu

n

6

CHAP. XII.

Containing many very material and sublime Contemplations and Reflections, in the Mind of Captain GREENLAND; and bis fearful Apprehensions at the Sight of that surprising Phænomenon call'd a Waterspout.

I view'd the twinkling THEN Stars, whhich feem'd to my poor Optics, no bigger than fo many gilt Buttons; I faid to myself, O Almighty! and Incompre. henfible Father! thou Great God of Power! and Eternal, Inconceivable Glory! How do we, infenfible! ungrateful! heedless Mortals, waste that precious Space of Time, which thou out of thy most merciful Bounty, hast been pleased to allot us, in the dangerous, malignant, and unprofitable Search of fleeting Follies: And which are never reach'd but Bitterness enfuses Pleasures, which are even prejudicial to the immediate Support of Life, and running thro' the unhealthful shallow Pursuits of thoughtless Trifles, neglect the nobler Objects of thy most wonderful Works? What Fool, who views this Infinite of Worlds? would chafe his Spleen in Search of unthought-fashions, and truit

VII

ublim

n the

nd bis

that

ater-

kling

poor

ns; I

pre.

ver!

we,

afte

out

fed

nt.

nd

esi

he

0,

S

ft

15

S

d

ruft his wholeStock of Happiness to the Chance f his Taylor, or his Sempstress's Genius! what Wretch who would dedicate but one fingle Hour in the comfortable and ufeful Contemlation of these immense Globes; and reslect to himself their vast! vast Distance from his Eyes; and yet, its Power to reach them; their regular Order! wonderful Magnitude! immeasureable Number! Use to one another! conftant Motions! furprifing Influence! and all their other amazing Properties, would dare to blaspheme the Holy Omniprescient Majesty! who is not only the Author and Disposer of all these wonderful Beings; but also, of thy own prefumptious infignificant Self? And who are no more, in Comparison to his Power, than a fingle Atom is to the whole Universe! O amazing! but most certain Difference! can we then, know this; and know, also, that this great King of Power and Glory, hath made, and appointed, us, his Vicegerents and Heads of the Earth: That 'tis he who gave us Life, and hath fo bountifully provided for us. that he loves us too! And that he created us first with a Desire to make us glorious Partakers of his infinite and endless Happiness: Can we know all this, and dare to lift one Thought to offend him? A dreadful, thoughtless Presumption beyond the Reach of Reafon. When Vol. III.

Ch

nfi

Da

ro

nd

ei

Re

w

Re

th

fre

ho

ly

tl

h

n

u

2

When I had fo far forutinized into the burning Sun, and Stars; till my elevated Soul had run her wearied Course, unto her utmost Reach; then would she fall again below, and make herfelf new Work, in the Examination of, the Deep. The vast Multitudes! different Forms, and various Qualities of the fcaly World, now furrnish'd me with equal Matter of Speculation and Wonder. And confequent. ly, of the most unfeigned Adoration towards the Almighty Author of them. The very Waters too, on which I rode, were separated into distinct Atoms; the massy circuling. Earth, which fustains their mighty Quantity, was also examined into: And the particular Adhesion, Gravity, and natural Attraction of every Particle towards each other, were to many Witnesses of the merciful Goodness of the divine Omnipotence: And that without fuch a minute Divisibilitude in Earth, Air, and Water; it is impossible that their innumerable Inhabitants could preferve Life.

From the Coutemplation of those copious Subjects, my wandering Thoughts, happily diverted the Time, by flying to the gaudy vicious Courts: Where the officed, ignorant, dignified Coxcomb; and the high tilted Harlots; the painted Prudes, and the whey-fac'd Puny-masters; with the huge Train of other infignificant

nfignificant Objects; (the favourite Sons and Daughters of Fortune's Proverbial-Care) all roud to fwell the pompous proud Affembly, nd breathe contagious Vices round their Soveeigns.

VII

burn-Soul

tmof

and ation

erent

fealy

atter

uent-

vards

very

rated

ling.

tity,

cular

n of

e fo

s of

hout

Air.

me-

ious

pily

Vi-

ant,

ar-

c'd

her

ant

From these surfeiting sickly Places, I in my Reflections foon retired to the innocent and wholesoms Fields, where the harmless Flocks, Reptiles, Infects, and all the harmonious feather'd Songsters become the Subjects of my fresh Admiration and Delight. The honest home-bred Swains, I compared with the Courtly-Lords; stript off the Canvas-Frocks of those, and the Gaudy-Robes, of these; and having divested them of the different Immaskments of customary Art; I saw them, in my uninterrupted Imaginations, in the plain, ungarnished Equipments of naked Nature. But oh! the wonderful Effect of this fuggested Exposition! the glowing Hinds, methought, appeared with manly wellbraced Nerves! wholesome, ruddy-Cheeks! open, honest Looks! and bleft with Nature's nobleft beft Proportions. While the nice-bred Courtiers, with fickly Jaundiced-Vifages! trembled to abide the healthful Open-Air! their Cheeks waxed-pale! their Eyes grew watery-weak! their indulged, unexercifed Limbs were warp'd in the Joints!

F 2

and

lit

m

E

P

n

and their whole loofe, tender Fabricks, feemed not united by the same Original Hand.

When I had spun the Thread of my Reflections unto its utmost Staple, on these Topics; I set them new a Work on the various Fragrance, mixt Complections, different Shapes, &c. of the beautiful vegetable World. The Trees, the Banks, the Hedges, the Gardens, Fields and Groves; each Spray, each Root, each Leaf, and every particular Blossom which stood recorded in my busy Memory, raised my admiring Soul to the highest Throne of Heaven.

Sometimes, my tired Senses were so enseabled by their utmost Works, in hard laborious Thought; that my exhausted Spirits sunk me into Slumbers; where I often selt in Dreams a more exalted and affecting Pleasure, on the same continued Subjects, than ever I had by waking Reason to affist me, and to regulate my Thoughts.

But taken up, and lost as I often was in the Depth of Contemplation, even till I was relieved by soft refreshing Sleeps; yet, were those natural friendly Visits not so predominant over my careful Watchings, as to endanger my Sasety, by nodding overboard, while I slept: For, the least matter Imaginable, instantly alarm'd me. So that, I consequently gather'd but very little

VII.

eemed

y Re-

e To.

arious

lapes,

The

dens,

Root

rhich

d my

Hea-

ifee.

ious

me

ams

the

by

my

the

ev-

ofe

/er

fe-

),

d

ry

le

little Refreshment, in comparison to what I might have done, if Idurat have ventured the Indulgence ofmy Naps quite out. But the feventh Day, from the Leaving of my Ship, I had a Pospect arose, or rather descended, which put me into the most dreadful Apprehension, and Terror. It was that furprifing Phænomenon call'd a Water-spout; and as I had never feen any of them before, I was greatly startled at its furprifing Appearance: Which was, at first, like that of a very deep Cloud; the upper Part was clear White, and the nether dark and dreadful. From which almost to the Surface of the Sea what is called the Spout; it much refembled a conical Tube, thro' which, the Water is forced up with the utmost Velocity: and whose upper Part is largest, and so diminishes to the Bottom. Under this feeming Tube the Water appears to boil and rise from the Sea in the Similitude of a flrong Pillar; as tho' it were raifed by fome irrefistible Power of Attaction above; or otherwife, by the Force of the most ponderous circumjacent Pressure below. At the top of this. Pillar, the Water feems to scatter, and passes away in a kind of Smoke. That is to fay, when the Cone does not descend so low as to feemingly touch the Head of the Pillar; F 3 which

Ch

hav hos

of

the

fre

I

ga

gr

in

1

E

which, it sometimes does not appear to the Eye to do.

As to a particular and philosophical Definition of this wonderful Meteor, I shall leave to my learned Readers, and those better skill'd in the natural Causes of such uncommon Phænomena.

When I first descry'd this dangerous Appearance, I judged myself about six or seven Leagues Distance from it; and was under the most fearful Apprehensions lest I should be unavoidably brought within the Power of its Action: Or, that I should be dash'd in Pieces with the ponderous Weight of Waters, which are said sometimes to sall at their Passing away. But it pleased Providence, that the Wind lull'd and the Meteor pass'd away right before me.

CHAP. XIII.

What Amusements the Captain devised after the Disappearance of the Water-Spout.

A T the agreeable Diffipation of the above Danger, I had Recourse to the Comforts of my Bottle-Case; and took a moderate Relief of my Rum: Which had seldom fail'd to gain me soon after an Inclination to eat. But having

VII

he Eve

inition

to my

in the

ome.

Ap.

feven

t the

e un-

of its

ieces

hich vay.

all'd

2.

af-

er-

ve

rts

e-

to

ut

having neither Bread, Greens, nor Roots on board me, I always eat as sparingly as possible of my Beef or Fish; and more especially as they generally created Drought; and made too frequent a Demand on my fresh Water-Cask. I now perceived, too, that the Sea Scurvy began to affect me much; and that my Body grew more costive than usual; fo that I was in some dread of a Fever. However, I reflected that it was very dangerous to fear any Distemper or Disorder; especially, when I confidered the terrible Effects which fuch Imaginations freequently work upon the Blood and Spirits: And that the weaker I was, the more those Fears would operate; if they were not suppress'd with all possible Force. And fince my whole Trust and Hope was in the unbounded Goodness of Divine Providence, both my Business and Interest was, not to fear any bodily Diforder, any more than to despond of my future Preservation.

These useful Restlections greatly raised my Spirits, and comforted my Mind. Therefore, I began to ponder, whether I could not devise something to exercise myself. I mightily miss'd my Books; the greatest Comfort, and best Companions I could have had. I wished a thousand Times for the consolating Company

F 4

of

Ch

An

wa

nei

in

ac

th

at

CI

W

b

t

I

of Boyle, Sherlock, Stanhope, Locke, Clarke, Dorrington, &c.

Now I bethought me, that if I had only tied together a little Canvas, and a Boat Oar, with small Cordage, and a short Pole (as a Boat-hook, or fome fuch thing) I could very eafily have made myfelf both a Sail and a Rudder; the first of which, would have also been of Use to me as a Signal, in case any Vessel should luckily appear: For I now lay so low to the Surface of the Water, that a Ship must be very near to me e'er they could poffibly discern me. But those Deficiencies being also past Remedy, I was obliged, likewise, for the Good of my Repose to banish all Thoughts of the Want of fuch Necessaries. And the Weather being now fine, I got out of my Hamper, and stood sometimes before it, and at other Times behind it, where the poor Carpenter and myfelf were alternately to have birth'd it. And this I did merely to firetch my Legs: For being fo narrowly confined; every new Position to me, was Ease and Refreshment. At length it occurred to me, the Weather being quite calm, that to ftrip and wash myself all over with Salt Water would greatly refresh me: But I confidered at the fame Time that I must not immerse myself in the Sea; because I might thereby never regain my Wicker Vehicle: And.

VII.

Clarke,

only

Oar,

(as a

very

Rud-

been

effel

low

muft

fibly

alfo

the

s of

her

and

nes

y-

nd

e-

on

th

te

r

I

And although I could fwim extremely well; I was not to run any fuch Risk on that Head? neither was I fure that there were not Sharks in those Seas. Therefore, how was this to be accomplish'd, with certain Safety? I debated the Matter within myself, for some Time; and at last, determin'd to strip myself, and sit across the Head of one of my Timbers; by which Means, my Legs and Thighs only would be descended into the Water; and I could easily then wash the rest of my Body. Accordingly I got into my Hampers, and began to divest myself of all my Cloaths, as fast as I could: But, it prefently occurring to me, that if there were really any Sharks near me, I should run. as great a Risk of my Life by this Method, as I should by plunging into the Sea; I slip'd on my Coat to keep my Body from the Heat of the Sun; and then replacing myfelf on my Bottle-throne, I called a Council of State amongst my best Re-considerations: At length, it was fully resolved; that, whereas I had before feen no Sign nor Appearance of any Shark, I would absolutely take a Dip Head foremost 35 and to prevent my risking any Peril of losing my Yacht, I ty'd my two Handkerchiefs together: The one that I had about my Neck, and the other in my Pocket. To those, I. added my Garters double; at the End of which E 5

I

I fastened the Sleeves of my Shirt: And then lashing fast the Tail of it to the Larboard Bow of my Bark; I hitch'd the extremity of my Handkerchiefs about my Right-arm-wrift, and then gently pop'd in, on the Larboard-fide, After I had well rub'd and refresh'd myself a few Minutes, I reaffumed my Vessel: And fancied that my Spirits were very much reliev'd. And, against the external Weight of Cold, which had braced the Pores, and put my Blood into a more nimble Motion, I charged my Internal with a small Dram from my favourite Rum Bottle; in order to maintain an Equilibrium.

As my Shirt and Handkerchiefs were now all wet, I quickly refolved to make a thorough and general Wash; and perhaps, more to amuse the Time, than any Expectation of real Benefit from this new Trade of Washing, I fell to Work, without either Soap, Lees, or fresh Water, but when I had done, and that it was too late; I heartily repented this stiff Starching of my Shirt, in particular, for it being immediately dry as it could be, by the Heat of the Sun; I was foon put in Mind, that it was not fafe to wear it any more till it became disposses'd of that Salt (by a fresh Water-washing) which I had so readily bestowed upon it; because, while it for emained, it would

would not only he always stiff and hard, like Canvas; but that it would never be thoroughly dry, nor wholesome to my Body.

CHAP. XIV.

The Captain is reduced, both in his Perfonal Spirits and his Provisions, to the last Extremity; yet, Providence and Nature both join their Assistance to compleat his Preservation and Safety

TTHEN the Sun was fet, I found myfelf that Night, methought, more chilly, and more low-spirited than I had been for feveral Nights before; and attributing it to the Want of my Shirt, and at the same Time. not daring to put it on, I fat musing to myself what Method to take that was likely to render me as comfortable as I was before. My Stomach I was most afraid of, last the heavy Dews should strike me there with a deadly chill. At last a Thought came into my Head, to affist my Wish; and render my Shirt as comfortable and useful to me as it was before: And that, without any Danger to my Health. Had I put it next my Flesh, so heavily fraught with the Effects of Salt Water, the Cold and fatal Dews would have made it so damp to me, besides

VII.

board nity of wrift, I-fide. Celf a

ht of put

y fa-1 an

now

real real

or that stiff bethe

the nd, it esh

e-, it

Ch.

ble

which

Wa

Vie

my

ter,

war

Bu

Ve

ter

ev

de

w

t

besides the ill Effects of the Salt, in affisting the Scurvy, that it might have been definitive. I therefore, having button'd my Coat and Waiftcoat close to my Breast, I instantly pulled on my Shirt over them, with the Bosom of it behind: Which Stratagem I found immediately answered my End; for I directly became more warm than I had been any Night before: And for which perhaps, I was partly indebted to the Affistance of my Cherry Brandy; for as soon as I had got on my Shirt, I took a hearty Pull at it; as indeed I had also done every night before, just as the Sun was finking below the Horizon. Then, being extream weary with excessive Thought; and the Doubts and Fears, and the vaft Multitude of other Anxieties, which in spight of my Resolution, and all Endeavours to the contrary, would frequently take Place in my poor frail Mind; I dedicated my most fervent Prayers to Heaven, with my usual Tribute of humble earnest Tears, for its Protection, and my Deliverance: I then infenfibly funk down into a fweet and most refreshing Sleep.

Three Days and Nights more passed away, in much the same Manner as the former; only, that every new Morning, besides adding to the tedious Account of Time, which made it still more grievous, brought with it some unavoidable

II.

ing

e. I

ift-

on

e-

ely

re.

nd

he

as

at

-

e

h

able Addition of new Cares. The chief of which was, the near Exhaustance of my fresh Water, Beef and Fish; which I could not now View, and reflect on, but it greatly irritated my Afflictions. My Fear of wanting fresh Water, was more fevere to me, than that of wanting fresh Meat; because my Bottle-case. was like Lord Peter's Loaf in the Tale of a Tub: But though it was Beef and Pudding, and Venison and Veal; yet it was not fresh Water. And my Cares and Grief for that encreased every Hour: I now fancy'd myfelf more thirfty. than usual; and though I was more constantly desiring to drink, yet I was more afraid. And with all the Philosophy, Resolution and Fortitude I was Master of, I could not bear up against it. It is incredible what an Alteration this one Article made in me, in fo short a Time: And I could not now think of it without Tears; when I should sometimes reprehend my Despair, and declaim against my Weakness in the Manner following:

Oh Wretch! Thou weak ungrateful Mortal! Is this a Proof of thy trufty Hope? Is this thy chearful Refignation, which thou hast so often vow'd to that most merciful Providence, which saved thee through all the Hortors of the dreadful Storm? Down, down on

thy faithless Knees! And implore his Pardon for this Diftruft, who hath fo often fnatch'd thee from Ruin! Death! and Mifery!

Then should I comfort myself again in my own Reply-Lord! Thou knowest I am but Nature, fickle, frail and weak! Subject to all her Workings, her Cravings, Passions, and her Fears. And shall I then presume to set myself above her Reach. No! that is too much! And who shall dare, Oh thou most Righteous God! to judge thy future Pleafure? How have I deserved thy manifold Mercies already received; that I should so affuredly depend upon their future Continuance? But thy Will be done, Oh thou great God of Mercy! of Glory and of Power.

These Ejaculations comforted me again. And the next Day produced me greater Joy in the midft of my Fears, than I had ever yet felt; this mighty Rapture was occasioned only by the Sight of feveral small Birds, and foon after, of that of a flender kind of Pole about eight Feet long, and about the Bigness of an English Quarter Staff. This Stick came close along fide of me about Ten o'Clock in the Morning, on the eleventh Day from my leaving the Ship: And when I had not a Pint and a Half of Water left in my Cafk. The Joy which this smallPrizegaveme was founded on the great

Hope

Ch

Ho

Ic

in

for

CO V

> W fh

> > h

n

1

VII.

ardon

tch'd

n my

but

t to

and

fet

too

noft

ire?

al

de-

thy

cy!

in.

in

ret

n-

on

ut

in

fe

10

-

d

h

t

Hope I had of being near to some Land. Though I could not form the least Conjecture where, or in what Part of the Worldit should be. For all my former Hopes and Views were grounded on the continual Expectation and Defire of feeing fome Vessel to relieve me. But as for Land, we accounted ourselves so far from any, when we were attack'd by the Storm, that being thus ship'd without either Sail, Oar, or Rudder, I had not the least Hope, or even Thought about it. But now the Sight of this Clubstick alarm'd my joyfullest Apprehensions. I was at great Difference with myfelf, when I had got hold of it, what Use I should put it to. At length I determined to errect it before me for a Flagflaff, in order to keep up my Spirits; as well as to affift any Eye, either by Land or Sea, towards discovering me. My Shirt was therefore immediately display'd upon this new erect-And to make it yet the more useful, I ty'd my Handkerchief to the Tails of my my Shirt, and used it, in the Manner and Nature of a Sail: But, at Night, it was pull'd down, and return'd to the useful Office of a Roqueleau.

Now every Cloud that appear'd near the Horizon was interpreted for Land; and every Moment bleffed me with new Expectations of feeing some Veffel. And thus my Spirits were

Ch.

11

wa

thi

po

kept alive for two Days longer; but without one Wink of Sleep: When Night coming on, and no certain Sign of Land; and not half a Pint of fresh Water left, I waxed exceeding fick with excessive Grief. I had not eaten one Ounce in the last forty-eight Hours; and when I had been thirsty, I had oftner quench'd my Drought with fome of my ftrong Liquors, then meddled with my Remains of fresh Water. But I was now feized with a violent Reaching; a cold Sweat, Sickness at Heart, and very weak, withal: Infomuch that I could scarcely sup. port myself upright in the Hampers. In this terrible Condition my desponding Thoughts return'd, and I was fo heavily oppress'd with Griefs, that I now befought Heaven, with my utmost Devotion, that his Merciful Goodness would put a Period to my Painful-Life. But Heaven's all-feeing Eye knows better what to deal us, than we to alk.

My Sickness being something worn off, I swallowed a little Surfeit-Water, but finding myself excessively low spirited, I dedicated my Prayers and Thoughts again to Heaven; and foon after, fell fast asleep. How long I Slept I' know not; but, by the Calculation I afterwards made, I judg'd it might be about thirty Hours. And when I waked, I found myfelf furround-

ed'

VII.

thout

g on,

Pint

with

ce in been with with was old

his eth

t

ed by a Multitude of Men and Boats: Who, I have fince learnt, had fome Trouble to wake me; fo ftrongly had Nature embraced this Opportunity to recover herself from her powerful Oppressors.

113

The End of the Seventh Book.



THE



THE

ADVENTURES

OF

Capt. GREENLAND.

BOOK VIII.

CHAP. I.

Containing the courteous and human Bebaviour of these Strange People towards the Captain.

HEN I open'd my Eyes and beheld all these People about me, it is beyond the Power of either Tongue or Pen to describe my vast Surprise and Joy. I sancy'd myself not yet awake; or, that I was absolutely in another World. For I had enjoy'd so long and

Ch. and com

The core in, I w

very tant

> fpe ftri bri

> > ha Ti

co fri P

of the

a k

and fweet a Sleep, accompanied with fuch comfortable Dreams, that I could not immediately believe what I both faw and heard. Though this transporting Prospect greatly accorded with what I had partly been employ'd in, in my long Sleep. For I had dream'd that I was cast upon an unknown Island, which was very rich and beautiful; and that the Inhabitants were exceeding fair, and very humane; that I was receiv'd amongst them with Respect and Care: And while every one was ftriving which should do me most Service, in bringing me fresh Cloaths, Meats, Liquors, and other Things to refresh me, I was thus happily interrupted by being awaked, as above. This pleasant Dream, the immediate Precedence of my happy! happy Fortune! was dooublefs convey'd to, and acted in my Mind, by my friendly and divine Guardians, the Ministers of Providence. All I had so agreeably dream'd of, foon after came to pass: For when they had thoroughly waked me, they made Signs to me of Tenderness and Friendship. And with the greatest Amazement imaginable, view'd and admired my Vehicle; and as they yet knew not what had before happen'd to me, they were at some loss to account for the Oddity of it. But after taking fufficient Notice of my Shirt being ty'd to my new Mast for an Enfign

Ch.

close

of a

many

dren,

very

with

was

my !

wea

bein

mad

nals

and

fen

me

pity

to

al

w

th

in

fo pl

ir

Enfign, or a Sail, or both; they from thence, rightly concluded, that it was not built accord. ing to the Fashion of my Country Vessels; but a fudden and fortunate Contrivance for my Prefervation in some eminent Danger.

I was now within about half a Mile of the Shore, which appear'd to me a perfect Paradife: For I faw Corn-Fields, Woods, Gardens, and a glorious Prospect of Plenty, as far as I could reach it with my Sight. And this Observation, with no little Joy confirm'd to me (besides the Boatmen's gentle humane Behaviour) that I was going into no fayage Country. But, on the contrary to one that promifed, in all Appearance. the most blessed Condition. But I could not yet discover what part of the Word I was got into: For I understood not the least Syllable of their Language; but by their strange Gibberish (as it was to me) I concluded that this must certainly be some fine Island, entirely unknown to any of the European Nations; and so indeed it proved.

I thought at first, it had been some Dutch Settlement; by their frequent founding of the Word Yaw, which I took to be Yes. But I foon found my Mistake, by their Actions, and other Words, having no Connexion with it. However, they did not offer to take me out of my Hampers, till they had tow'd me quite

close

1.

e,

1.

at

.

e

close to the Shore; and which was the Beach of a very pretty and compact Town; where many handreds of Men, Women and Children, were affembled to fee me get out of my very strange Vehicle, in which they affisted me with Great gentlenefs and Care. But when I was brought to Land, and put upon my Feet, my Legs were fo numm'd, and I was fo very weak, that I could not stand up-right. But being perfectly fensible of all that pass'd, I made them the best and most intelligible Signals I could, to express to them my Obligations and Gratitude, which they feem'd to be very fensibly pleased with. And one of the Gentle_ men who flood upon the Shore, feeing, and alfo pitying the helpless Condition I was in; spoke to the Waterman who brought me there, to carry me to his House, accordingly they got a large broad Plank; and three or four of them whip'd me upon their Shoulders, and follow'd the Gentleman home: Where I was first put into a kind of an easy Chair to rest me, and foon after, they brought me fomething very pleafant and good to drink. After which, feeing that I was yet very low spirited, exceeding weak, and greatly fatigued, they put me on a good clean Shirt, and laid me on a comfortable warm and foft Bed; where I foon again fell fast asleep.

During

During this refreshing Nap, they had taken a great deal of Care not to disturb me; and it was the next Day, before I again awoke: Which the Gentleman (my kind Hoft) and his. Wife were no fooner inform'd of, but they both came into my Room, to fee how I was. The Gentleman took hold of my Hand, and perceiving by my Pulse that I was now greatly recovered, ask'd me, by a Sign, which I easily understood, if I could eat: I kis'd my Hand to him, and bowing, fmack'd my Lips; at which he gave me a gentle Nod, as much as to answer me, as I thought, Very well. Then, turning to one of his Servants, he gave him Directions accordingly. This being done, he demanded by another Sign, whether I would arise and be dress'd? I kiss'd my hand again; and they foon after brought me another warm Shirt. But as I had a most immoderate long Beard, and was strangely Weather-beaten, they knew not, as yet, what kind of Features I had, and being defirous of viewing my naked Face, divested of this filthy Mask of Dirt and Hair, the Gentleman enquired of me by another Signal whether I would be shaved or not? As I perceived he himself was, and all the other Men I had yet feen. To which I return'd another Salute with my Hand. fently there came into the Room, a great roughheaded Ch. 1.

headed Hand,

Gallon fac'd I

bout that m

Ladies In t

hot W Middle the I other the he

> to do whic king

whic

whe the

Pigs

ple thit

riof

headed Fellow with an earthen Vessel in his Hand, that might hold full two English Beer Gallons: And with him a little dapper palefac'd Lad to attend him, who was cropp'd ahout the Head to fuch a ridiculous Degree, that methought he look'd like one of the fine Ladies of the last Age, without her Cap on.

In this Vessel there was a good Quantity of hot Water; and I being now feated in the Middle of the Room, ready for his Purpofe; the Lad took hold of the Vessel, while the other began to rub and foak my Head, with the hot Water, and both his Hands, as though the Devil had been in him. This he continued to do for near half a Quarter of an Hour: By which severe scalding Bout, and perceiving no king of Instrument in his Hand, as yet, with which he was to shave the Hair off; I made little Doubt, but that it was to be stripp'd off, when I had undergone a fufficient Scalding, as the Poulterers ferve their Fowls and Roafting Pigs in England.

By this Time, the Room was as full of People as it could well hold; who were all drawn thither to view this wonderful Stranger; and who were all fraught with this impatient Curiofity, by the Sight and Hearfay of my extraordinary Veffel: Which perswaded them that

the

Ch.

mv

fo e

with

for

mol

are

invi

Ad

Ex

Vie

for

per

or ed,

H

the Owner of it, must certainly be a very fur-

prising Creature.

Presently the Trimmer began to exercise his Art upon my Pericranium and in two Minutes of Time, which was about the Space he was employ'd in the Operation, I thought he had given me a new Head; I was fo much refreshed by its being shaved: And now he began to undertake the same Service to my Face; save only that he did not fop me in the like Manwith his fealding hot Water. When my Beard was off, and my Viffage clean washed, I selt unto myself, a quite different kind of Crea. ture; I was fo pleafantly revieved: And I could eafily perceive that all those about me, were perfectly fatisfy'd with the Linement of my So that they feem'd to admire me with great Pleasure and Respect.

I now began to have a high Opinion of the Genius of these People; and in Particular, that of my Barber, from the abundant and sudden Relief I had now found from his so long foaking of my Head with the hot Water. Which Operation I chiefly attributed this mighty Benefit to. But indeed I afterwards learnt that the Obligation was only due to my kind and hospitable Host; who being bred a Surgeon, had order'd this worthy Shaver, to take that Method that he might thoroughly cleanse

my

11

ur

his

tes

725

ad

h-

to

ve

1-

my Head; as well as to open the Poors, and fo encourage the freer Perspiration.

And indeed I cannot here avoid reflecting with great Pleasure, what a Happiness it was for me, that this worthy, hospitable, and most humaneGentleman was not of the sameCast of Mind, which most of our English Surgeons are; who at fuch a Time would probably have invited me into their Houses, rather for the Advantage of fome ridiculous and inhuman Experiment, and for the Use and Service of a Glass-case, than with any Defign, or charitable View of endeavouring to recover me to my former Health and Strength. So that, what the Inclemency of the Elements had not quite perfected, an English Surgeon's Incision-knife. or a Tryal dofe, would have quickly compleated, to their very great Satisfaction and Credit.

CHAP. II.

How the Captain's kind Friend behaved towards him, for several Days after; and how they pass'd their Time together. With some other Historical-Matter.

Had, in a Canvassb-ag, in my Coat-pocket, about 84 Pounds in English and Portugal Gold; which I had taken out of my Locker Vol. III. G in

in my Cabin, just before I enter'd into my Ve. hicle; and which in fact, was all the Cash I had in the Ship. And this I remember'd to take with me, that in case I was either taken up by any Ship, or otherwise thrown upon any Land; I thought I should be taken the more Care of by being able to make them fome little A. mends. Besides my Money, I had a very good Gold Watch, in an outfide Shagreen-Cafe. Which, indeed, was of very little Ser. vice to me at Sea; for I had never once wound it up fince I left my Ship. So that in this folatary Interval, all my Pride of Heart, and world. ly Ostentations, were entirely bury'd in the most profound Oblivion. Though, now indeed there was like to be a perfect Reftoration of their wonted Use and Vanity.

For, as foon as I was put to Bed, my honest worthy Host examin'd all my Pockets; and immediately secured both my Money and Watch, which were the only Things of Value that I had about me, except my Ring (the dear Pledge of that most faithful and enchanting Friendship, from my charming and worthy Maria!) But those were not secured by my good Friend, in the Manner as some of our English Gentry do, whatever they can lay hold on, who dwell on the Sea-Coasts; and who, under the most sacred and religious Character

Ch. 2. of Chri

and mu
tive, in
vocatio
having:
Wreck
too, a
the W

the Sh

bour.

IG

fecure Chriff fhav' Wat only vent He a the both eno of Sig

Be

in

aı

V

1

f

H.

e.

1

to

IV

re

r

•

of Christians, can very humanely both plunder and murder, either Foreigner or Fellow-Native, in cool Blood; without any further Provocation, or Crime committed, than that of having just escaped the Danger of some ruinous Wreck, or dreadful Storm! And sometimes too, after having most humanely first made the Wreck themselves, and then seized upon the Ship and Goods as a Reward for their Labour.

I say, my present charitable Host did not secure my Watch and Money with any such Christian-like Design; for as soon as I was shav'd and wash'd, he presented me with my Watch and Money sase again. For he had only taken it into his own Possession, to prevent any other Person's destrauding me of it. He admired both the Chassing of the Watch, and the Impression on the Coin: But as there were both Watches and Stampt Money, plenty enough in that Country, he resused to take either of them, when I vehemently press'd him by Signs to accept of them. And which singular Behaviour had little affinity with the Complainance of most Englishmen.

After this comfortable long Sleep, and Shitfing and Shaving, I found myself pure hungry; and perhaps could have eaten a very hearty Meal, if I could but have got it; but that was not, as yet, to be had: For now a Servant en-

Ch.

dear I

ted to

as I

with a

to tal

confi

trainf

havid

Tear

perc

thise

Conc

I

of c

wei

unl

Lo

but

En

ca

fp

th

by

H

b

V

f

peils

tered the Room to us, with about the Quantity of a Pint of fine thin Broth : Though, I believe it was very rich, from the Nourishment I after. wards received from it. The Gentleman tafted it first, himself, to know whether it was made according to his Directions; and having approved of it, he held it to me with his own Hand, making a Sign that I should sup it up, I easily understood him, and without more Ceremony than a respectful Bow, I answer'd his Defires in an Instant.

When I had drank my Broth, he pointed to a further Corner of the Room, and shew'd me my Bottle-Case, my Water-Cask, my Shirt-Flag; and the small Remains of my Beef and Fish. As foon as I faw them, I ran to them, with as much Love and Eagerness as many a new marry'd Man after a Month's Wedlock, does to embrace his Bride; and falling down upon my Knees, I kis'd them several times: And after lifting up my Heart, as well as my Hands and Eyes, in Gratitude to Heaven; I very devoutely kis'd them over and over again. Gentleman observed me very attentively; and was so far from being surprised at my Behaviour, that he rightly understood, that I had now embraced them, not, with any false Worfhip; but with my Thankfgivings to Heaven, the Author and Giver of them, as fo many

dear

HI.

tity

eve

ter-

aft-

W29

ing

wn

IP.

ore 'd

ed 'd

t-

dear Preservatives, which had jointly contributed to save my Life. And therefore, as soon as I had resumed my Feet, he came to me with an hasty Smile, and opening wide his Arms, to take me to his Breast, he held me close a considerable Time. I was now so suddenly transported by his generous and friendly Behaviour, that I unavoidably let fall a Number of Tears upon his Shoulders. Which he no sooner perceived, than it moved in him a most sympathised Effect; so that he now held me in a second tender Embrace.

It may, perhaps, feem a little oddly to some of our inflexible Readers, that two Men, who were utter Strangers to each other, and even of unknown Nations, should shew such excessive Love and fudden Friendship towards each other; but, be it further observed, that, although in England, and other Parts of Europe, a Papist can mortally hate a Protestant; the Churchman fourn a Baptist; the Baptist deride a Quaker; the Quaker condemn a Presbyterian; the Presbyterian revile the Rest; and the fine Gentleman despise them all, (and all this, for only being of different Opinions) yet, those two worthy Men, honest Brothers in Nature! foon found that noble Sympathy of Soul which is the furest! strongest! sweetest Bond of Affection, that can possibly unite the firmest, G 3 best,

Ch.

Tin

Thi

der

He

Ico

out

gai

He

not

the

AF

tle

ah

to

191

foi

B

of

to

g

p

n

d

A

best, and most disinterested Friendship between Mankind. But this is what the sordid! venal Wretch! the lewd Prostitute! the deceitful Courtier! nor the affected Coxcomb, can never taste. These are elevated Sweets, of such a delicate and sublime Cast, that sew are sufficient Judges of.

It is impossible to express what mighty Regret we both felt at our not being able to converse with one another, literally. But as this could not, as yet, be help'd; my Friend (as I shall now, with great Reason, call him) after this last Embrace, taking me by the Hand, led me to my Chair; and for Want of intelligent Words, to understand one another, we fat filently looking at each other, for some Time. At length, he ask'd me, by Sign, if I could write? I answer'd his Signal, immediately to his Wish: At which, he jumped up with great Joy, and instantly brought me Pen, Ink and Paper, all of the same Kind, and full as good as those we have in England. Now we had great Hopes of each other's Satisfaction; but alas! it was foon vanish'd. For when we had each exhibited a Specimen of our Performance, the Characters had not the least Similitude: Here my Friend paufed a little; and then running to my Bottle-Case, which was not lock'd, he, clapping his Hand upon it, two or three Time's Wide:

VIII.

be-

did1

de-

mb.

eets.

few

11..10

Re

con-

this

(28

af-

elli-

We

me.

uld

ta

reat

and

pod

had but

nad

ce,

de:

d,

ee.

e's

Times, cry'd, Bor? Bor? - In English. This, This! or what is this? - I readily understood him; and answer'd him-Bottle-Cafe. He repeated my Words instantly; as plain as I could do. And then, opening of it, he took out thence, one of the Bottles; and cried again - Bor? - Bor? I reply'd, a Bottle. -He again repeated my Word, very plain. I now went to him-and having taken out anotherof the Bottles, faid to him, Your good Health. After which I put it to my Lips, and drank a litthe of it. He took the Bottle out of my Hand, and also tasted of it; but without any Attempt to repeat my Words; for Drinking of Healths is not the Custom of that Country. And therefore, he did not in the least understand me: But apprehended that I had express'd the Name of the Liquor, which made him also taste of it. To be brief, we spent several Days after this together, in endeavouring to understand the Names of Things: In which Time we learnt a great deal. I could begin at his Head, and pointing to every Part of his Face and Body name them all to him in his own Language, diffinctly, down to the very Toes of him. And my ingenious Friend could do the same in English, besides a good deal of the Household Furniture, Cloaths, and other Things.

During this Time, I was gathering Strength apace

apace, and consequently improved proportionably, in my personal Appearance. For my Benefactor was extreamly careful in prescribing what I eat and drank. And as soon as I had a little recovered myself, and began to pick up a little Flesh, he both bled me, and physick'd me well, which I am very consident prevented me of having a Fit of Sickness: Having undergone so great a Change of Diet, without Exercise; besides being now in an entire new Climate.

Great Flocks of People reforted fiill to fee me, but my good Friend having a most intense Defire to learn as much of my Language as possible, in order to know my History, and that of my own Country, as well as to relieve me from the Fatigue of shewing myself; order'd his Servants to give out that I was not well; and in the mean Time, bespoke me an intire Suit of handsome new Cloaths, of his own Taylor, according to the newest Fashion of that Country, and which he likewife paid for. But as he very well knew that the Gene. rality of Mankind pay a most remarkable Respect to outside Show; he also order'd me a pretty, lively well-fancied Robe of a loofe and noble Air, to wear over them. And having now, also given out, that I was a Prince in my own Country (that it might be of future Service to me, tho' at first he only thought of is

25

as a litte the lime

Ch.

and B

> go a as t Boa

> > ed'r Shi

> > > he W tait

Va ce

ad

ca

fi n

I

III.

ona-

Be-

bing

had

c up

k'd

ited

ler-

ife;

.

fee

nfe

25

na

ve

r.

ot

n

IS

n

d

as a Jest,) he resolved, as soon as we could a little understand one another, to carry me to the Metropolis of the Island, in order to shew me all the remarkable Curiosities of that fine and populous City.

But perhaps it may be necessary, before we go any further, to acquaint my Readers, that as this generous Man had fatisfied the honest Boatmen for their Trouble, who had discovered my Float from the Shore, by the Help of my Shirt Sail; and who had fafely tow'd me in; he had therefore demanded of them both my Wicker-Bark, and all which it then contain'd: And for which I afterwards learnt, that he made them a Present of much more Value than it was all really worth, except my Watch and Money. My Boat he carefully flow'd under a Shed in his Garden; where it remain'd the continual Wonder of the admiring Populace. And I am persuaded, that if it had fallen into English Hands; especially such as Mr. Panopticon's, &c. they would have made a fine Penny of it. But my good and: worthy Friend was far above such paltry Purpoles.

G 5

CHAP.

this of the good land white the first is a

Containing the Captain's Reasons for not Recording the exact Situation of this famous Mand; its Name, and that of his present good Friend; and farther Marks of his judicious Generosity.

Y this Time, it is possible that our curious D Readers might have fome defire of knowing the Name, the Nature, and Situation of this new discover d Part of the World; and which perhaps, they may hereafter find, by our Description, is a Spot of as much real Worth, as any of the same Quantity of Acres, in the whole known Globe. I should indeed have great Pleasure and Satisfaction in giving the Public a very particular and accurate Account of the exact Situation, Latitude, and Longitue of this Famous Island; with all its Harbours, Bays, Inlets, &c. But for one substantial Reason to the contrary : viz. That just and divine Propert, which fays, the Labourer is worthy of his Hire. I would not willingly, after the innumerous Toils, Hazards and Inconveniencies I have in my Youth feverely felt; be the fortunate Discoverer of a New, fine, rich World! and leave the whole Benefit of fo noble

a Discovery to some penurious, sly, lurking Wretch, who might perhaps either beg, or purchase a Royal-Grant, for the chief Profits and Privileges of what ought to be my Rights only. The Portugueze were the first Europeans. who discovered any Navigation to the Indies. For Reward of which, their Sovereigns usually conferr'd on their Commanders, the Dignity, &c. of Viceroys, Governors, Admirals, Generals. &c.

Vespucius Mericus, who (five Years after Columbus had prepared the Way) made some additional Discoveries on that Continent; and had the Honour to have all that vaft! vast Part of the World! entitled after his Name, AME-RICA, New-York was fold by its first Difcoverer, Mr. Hudson, to the Dutch: Who held it in Possession upwards of 50 Years, and call. ed it New Netherland : But was then taken from them by King Charles the Hd, and given by Letters-Patent, to his Brother the Duke of York. By whose Title it is still called.

PENSIVANIA is likewife fo call'd from its first Patentee, W. Penn, Esq; which was given to him by the same Sovereign. And the Father of whom (King CHARLES the First) did in like Manner bestow Mary-Land by Letters-Patent unto the Right Hon. the Lord Baltimore. Only obliging him to retain its first Name of Mary Land, because it was given in Honour to Mary his Queen.

I could quote a great many more of the fame Kind, from Historical Authority; where the first Discovers have had Royal-Grants from the Grown for their just Rewards; and others, who have been very ill-rewarded by the covetous, or malicious Misrepresentations and Designs of evil-minded Ministers. So that, until I receive fome advantageous Offers from the Government for this important Discovery; I shall content myself with barely entertaining my Readers with a faithful Account of whatever is there remarkable, and actually accorded to me, while I refided on this most Beautiful Mand. Let it then suffice, that this charming, Place is fituate in the most pleasant and wholefome Part of the temperate Zone; (but whether North or South, shall remain, as yet, a Secret) and abounding with every Thing that's either useful or necessary, to support or employ Life: As Wood, Water, Iron, Coales, Silver, Copper, Lead, Tin, Beafts, Fowls, Fift, Fruit, Corn, Butter, Checfe, and Herbage of all kinds. The Inhabitants, I mean the human Part, being the very best and the very worst Produce of the whole Country.

This charming Island, for Reasons best. known to myfelf, I shall here be graciously pleased to entitle by the Name of PUPPET-ISLAND: And when it shall fall into the Hands

and

of a more superior Power, and with better Right, they may change it for any other, which they may then conceive more proper. So that, without further Ceremony, or Circumlocu, tion, I shall proceed to give you a very faithful Account of all which there befel me; 28 well as every other remarkable and useful Passage, that happen'd within the Scope of my Observation and Comprehension.

First then, I shall briefly inform my good Readers, that after I had, with the continual. and ready Affistance of my worthy Friend, and my own indefatigable Application, for about the Space of feven Weeks, learnt fo much of the Puppet Language, as to be able to understand most Things he said to me; he prevailed upon me, without the least Difficulty. to accompany him to the Capital Town, or Metropolis of this fine Island: Where, in the Character of a Foreign Prince, he faid, he would introduce me to the whole Court, and most of the great Ministers; both, in regard to my past Misfortunes, and for his own fake. For, I may here acquaint you, that this rightworthy Gentleman had lately been in the Service of his Royal Sovereign, the YAWHOOP (which, in the Puppet Language, fignifies their King) but now, being by the Demise of some Friend, luckily possessed of a very large Estate,

and not pleased at some Indignity which had been dealt him by some eminent Person in Power, he retired to this, his Native Part of the Island, to quietly enjoy the happy Fruits of his Possessions, in the most beneficent and hospitable Proceeding, that hisgreat Humanity, Learning, Wisdom, Skill and Fortune could jointly, or separately administer. And, by my passing at Court in some significant Character, he said, would be of great Credit to-us both; since, otherwise, I should be no more regarded than a mere Beggar.

This great and inimitable Man (in Regard to, and for the Sake of a most worthy English Gentleman, of this Name, to whom I am under many singular Obligations) I shall here, for the suture, distinguish by the Name of the Yawho STARDALE: And I must further shew you that the Word Yawho, signifies a Gentleman of Fortune, about the Degree of an English Squire.

My Friend Stardall, before we fet out on this much defired Journey, instructed me above all Things, to be very careful not to let any one know how much I had gathered of the Puppet Language; by which Means he said, I should the easier discover how I was really received and approved, wherever I went. And the better to assist me in this necessary Proceed-

ir

1

ſ

ing, he told me, that whenever he thought it proper to say any Thing to me before Company, he would express himself as well as he could in English. Because, said he, although it is my Native-Country; I am obliged in Honour to acknowledge, that I am asraid you will find the Generality of the Puppets not worthy of too much Trust. And also warn'd me at the same Time that I should always he very cautious, and reserved: Not forward in contracting new Intimates; nor too free in the Delivery of my Sentiments: Especially till I had acquired a little Knowledge and Experience of their Nature and Temper.

With these, and some other necessary Hints and Instructions, I prepared for the Presence of the Puppet Court, &c. The particulars of which our Readers may expect to find in the next Chapter.

Name of the Capital City) was no focuer tack a publicity or, by my Filend Standard than a black one that that a black out the a Commet, all over the black of the short of the sout, that howers Novice Private that I raising that the took good the greens the most and Keipech inclock good Care to decrease my leaden accordingly: And Name to discount out that he did not to much have to the contrary of by the terms to the centrary of by the terms I imaging that he did not the much which product Casters I imaging that he

CHAP. IV.

Captain Greenland is carried to the Metropolis of Puppet Island; and introduced to a certain Great Man, in Quality of a British Prince, and afterwards to Court: With an Account how he was there received.

I Imagine it almost unnecessary to say, that I the Arrival of fo great a Stranger, and in fo strange a Manner, had made a most remarkable Noise all over the Island; and especially when I must add, that they have there much the fame kind of Vehicles for Public News as our daily and Weekly Papers are in England: fo that my Journey for Sonolendis, (which is the Name of the Capital City) was no fooner talk'd publickly of, by my Friend Stardall; than it blazed out like a Commet, all over the Island. And he having also yet given out, that I was a Foreign Prince, that I might meet with the greater Honour and Respect; he took good Care to decorate my Person accordingly: And. he was fo cautious herein that he did not fo much as let his own Wife know to the contrary; by which prudent Caution, I imagine, this wife Man's

Man's Opinion was, that all over the World, a Woman was no other—but, a Woman. And to say Truth, I found Mrs. Stardall not only an amiable one, but also a very good Woman. And which Solomon himself allows to be a very good Thing.

In short, she lent her Helping-hand towards equipping me: And when I was fully attired, I don't think that I made a much worse Figure than fome of our Theatrical Kings do: Save only, that I had no great Occasion to shew my Majesty with fo much Bellowing and Ranting. But, for big Looks, and fine Cloaths, I was, in my Opinion, too noble a Figure to be grin'd at. Our fine French Marquis, who fo lately bilk'd the Town, his Taylor and his Lodgings, was but a foolish Prig, in his personal Appearance, compared to my English Highness. For having now perfectly recover'd my Flesh: My Hereditary Food of Beef and Pudding reshone upon my Cheeks, with all the ruddy glowing Hue of British manly Health.

About fourteen Days before we fet out, my Friend Stardall wrote to a Relation of his at Sonolendis, to provide us with properAccommodations to be ready exactly against such a Time; and we now set forth in a neat and genteel Equipage of his own: And though not grandly,

yet decently attended. For this Gentleman's Way of thinking was, that the real Enjoyment of Life and Wealth is not to be found in extraordinary Show and Noise, but in a competent and regular Decency.

As foon as we arrived in Town, the People flock'd about the Door, as they do in England, at the Sight of an Irish Beauty, a new French Drefs; or, to hear a bawdy Song. And every Time I came to the Window, I could hear them cry, in their own Language There! that's him! that's the Prince! Bless me! he's a fine Man. At which Expressions, I could not help fmiling. And which too, might possibly improve their Opinion of my Nature and Temper: For it naturally made me reflect; that it was indeed very true, I was either a Prince, or a Beggar, just which they were pleased to think me ! And in fact both. For these being only human Appellatives, neither the one, nor the other, can make any Manner of real Difference in an honest true Philosopher. While the People thought me a Prince, why, I was a Prince, to them. But, to myfelf, not a bit handsomer, wifer, richer, nor stronger, for it. And if the Plainness of my Friend had spared me the Compliment of this Illustrious Title, and had represented meas I really was; the other

other Appellation would only have abridged my Smiles. Riches, Power, and Titles are often gain'd by Trifles: And, we none of us know what Good, or Evil, Providence hath in Store for us: Poor David, when he left his Flocks a grazing, to carry his Brother's Bread and Cheefe to the Camp, little thought that he should gain a Crown by fortunately knocking a great blockheaded Fellow's Brains out with Pebble-Stones; who was almost big enough to eat him. And we may also here observe the mighty Difference of Things, in Thie and Place 1 the Practice of Throwing Stones at People, which was fo laudable and worthy in Pharoah's Time, (and others of the Fews, Greeks, and Romans as even to deferve a Kingdom; is now, in our Days, fuch a naughty and untoward Trick, as hath purchased to many a poor Boy a most severe Flogging. Such ave the different Constructions and Rewards of the fame Human Actions in different Periods Minters (1 mean in Putpet Thand) somiTh

And as David had no Royal Pretentions, but this lucky Caft, to so elevate his Fortune; for I might have wandered all the whole World over, before any one would have received me asa Prince; if Providence had not directed me to this my Worthy Friend; and

way of thinking was, that the real Enjoyment of Life and Wealth is not to be found in extraordinary Show and Noife, but in a competent and regular Decency.

As foon as we arrived in Town, the People flock'd about the Door, as they do in England, at the Sight of an Irish Beauty, a new French Drefs; or, to hear a bawdy Song. And every Time I came to the Window, I could hear them cry, in their own Language- There! that's him! that's the Prince! Bless me! he's a fine Man. At which Expressions, I could not help fmiling. And which too, might possibly improve their Opinion of my Nature and Temper: For it naturally made me reflect, that it was indeed very true, I was either a Prince, or a Beggar, just which they were pleased to think me ! And in fact both. For these being only human Appellatives, neither the one, nor the other, can make any Manner of real Difference in an honest true Philosopher. While the People thought me a Prince, why, I was a Prince, to them. But, to myfelf, not a bit handsomer, wifer, richer, nor stronger, for it. And if the Plainness of my Friend had spared me the Compliment of this Illustrious Title, and had represented meas I really was; the other

other Appellation would only have abridged my Smiles. Riches, Power, and Titles are often gain'd by Trifles: And, we none of us know what Good, or Evil, Providence hath in Store for us: Poor David, when he left his Flocks a grazing, to carry his Brother's Bread and Cheefe to the Camp, little thought that he should gain a Crown by fortunately knocking a great blockheaded Fellow's Brains out with Pebble-Stones; who was almost big enough to eat him. And we may also here observe the mighty Difference of Things, in True and Place the Practice of Throwing Stones at People, which was fo laudable and worthy in Pharoah's Time, (and others of the Fews. Greeks, and Romans) as even to deferve a Kingdom; is now, in our Days, fuch a naughty and untoward Trick, as hath purchased to many a poor Boy a most severe Flogging. Such ave the different Constructions and Rewards of the fame Human Actions in different Periods Abentiers (1 mean in Putpet-Ifiand) ismiT do

And as David had no Royal Pretenfions. but this lucky Caft, to so elevate his Fortune; for I might have wandered all the whole World over, before any one would have received me asa Prince; if Providence had not directed me to this my Worthy Friend; and

of me. However, this short Way of ennobling me, was of great Worth to me hereafter; according to the vulgar Acceptation of Things: For I was received with very great Respect, even at Court: For my Friend Stardall, in order to introduce me there, with the utmost Advantage; first carried me with him to a certain great Nobleman's House, who was his particular Friend and Patron. And who was, also, a very great Favourite of the Yawhoop's.

To this great Person he told a most wonderful, grave, and pitisul Story of my high Birth and Sufferings; embellish'd after such a Fashion as he himself thought most proper. I understood the greatest Part of all he said, which made me sometimes, a little improve my Complexion; but seeming all the while not to understand them, his Lordship took my Blushes only for a Sign of my modest and princely Concern at not being able to comprehend them. For State-Ministers (I mean in Puppet-Island) have not always the prosoundest Penetration.

When he had heard my Friend fay all he had to offer concerning me, he promised to introduce me to the King: And demanded of my Friend, whether I could not so bring it about, as to put the British Dominions under his Master the Yawhoop's Protection? This Question had like

sid 1

to have spoiled all; for I, well understanding what he faid, was fo highly chagrin'd thereat, that I was just going to thunder out some dreadful Instances of our English Atchievements, and the Terror of their Arms; when my Friend's Injunction of my not attempting the Puppet-Language, inflantly took Place in my Mind: And, my Friend Stardall, being by much the able Politician, feem'd to encourage the Minister's Hopes in that great Point. So that now we'll suppose all this powerful and lovely Kingdom of Great-Britain was, according to the continual and restless Ambition of Courts, the imagin'd Stake of a future Bargain, between my sham-Highness and the Puppet-Government.

To be brief, I was the next Day carried by this Nobleman, and my good Friend, to Court; where I was, in the English Phrase, most graciously received (but not knighted) The Yawhoop, who is a fine, fenfible, and most affable Prince, asked of my Friend, agreat many Things, both concerning me and my Country: And amongst the rest, when and how I proposed to return home? A Question, perhaps as hard to be truly folved, as eyer was proposed even in Mathematics: And therefore, confequently could not be prefently answer'd.

The Ladies were the chief Persons there, who most seemed to note me; and the Title of Prince, I could perceive, tickled their simple Imaginations very prettily: Every one of them striving with emulating Vanity and Affectation, which should shew me the most infignificant Curtesy. Many of them, as I afterwards learn'd, heartily wish'd for my Establishment, in some one, or other of their own domestic Offices, according to their various Tastes and Tempers. One of them, wanted me for her Groom of the Chambers; another for her Page; a third wish'd me for her Gallant; and a fourth to feed her Monkey.

These honourable Employments, I also found, were premised amongst them, because I came not to Court with that swaggering Pomp and Attendance, like the Dauphin of France: But when they were a little inform'd of my Adventures, and that my Ship and Attendants were all cast away in a Storm; several of them in pure Pity to my unfortunate Condition, infinuated to my Friend Stardall, that, if I would accept of it, they would willingly allow me a small Pension, only for my constant Attendance to make their Tea; and, when I should have learn'd their Language sufficiently, to bring them News, and tell them strange Stories.

CHAP. V. mandande

The above Proposal improved: And a vol luntary Subscription raised by the Ladies for three Years to support the British Prince, in case be should not, in that Space, be better provided for.

NO fooner came to understand these last Proposals, but I strongly infinuated to my Friend Stardall, a most earnest Defire to accept of them; and for the following private Reasons. At the fame Time I wish'd him to bring it about in the best and most expeditious Manner he could.

First, That being in a strange Country, and with very little Money, it was both my Duty and Business to endeavour the best I could for a future Provision. Secondly, As I was under the greatest Obligations to my Friend; this Opportunity would in all Probability, not only prevent the Accumulation thereof, in so eminent a Degree; but perhaps, might put it into my Power to acquit myfelf of some Part. Thirdly, it afforded me a tolerable Prospect of acquiring a pretty. Fortune, in the genteelest Manner: And during the Business of which, I might be likewise contriving some Means to further the regaining:

of my Native England: And also consequently, that of my dear, and never to be forgotten, the lovely Angelica! And Fourthly and laftly, I should doubtless, hereby, the truer and much easier, inform myself of all such things of Consequence, as might both be useful to me, and the most worthy to be known: And more especially such Passages in High-Life, as by any other Means I could never expect to attain.

When my good Friend perceived me fo defirous to come into this Scheme, he began to confider it very gravely; and at last proceeded, and luckily accomplish'd my Defire, as follows: He first founded the chiefest of these great Ladies, who had proposed me a Pension; how far she did affect such a real Desire; and at the fame Time encouraged her Hope, that fuch an honourable and generous Proceeding, might by fome Means or other be brought about, that is to fay, the Difficulty of obtaining my Highness's Consent thereto: Especially, he said, as I knew not (as yet) of any Method to gain the least Assistance from my own Country. And that fuch a generous Contribution towards my Support, might be laying the strongest Foundation imaginable for her own future Glory; if it should so happen, that I could once but accomplish a navigable Correspondence between the British and Puppet-Isles.

This

I

k

N

P

U

Y

Va

CC

fo

A

W

25

he

W

wl

m

Su

This Method had the defired Effect; fo that the good and generous Lady immediately proposed to my Friend, to raise me a private Subscription among & about half a Dozen of the first Ladies of Quality; and that herself would not only be the first Subscriber, but would also take upon her to answer for the Completion of this Purport. And which noble and bountiful Talk, fhe compleated the very fame Night. And which was done luckily for me according to the Direction of the old English Proverb; viz. Striking the Iron while it was hot. So that the next Morning, my Friend Stardall was fent for, and a Purse of about the Value of Six Hundred Pounds English, deposited in his Hands for the Use of the English Prince: Being the first half Year's Subscription of Six Ladies who had privately, mutually, and absolutely engaged to continue this Subscription for three Years, if I found not a better Provision in the mean Time. And all, that was required from me in return, was to make them such public or private Visits, as they themselves should appoint. And I must here declare to their Honour, that this Injunction was without the least vicious View or Defign whatever, but merely to entertain them with my Adventures, and the Particulars of my own Country; that is to fay, after I had acquired a Sufficiency of the Puppet Language to answer VOL. III. H this this Purpose; and towards which they all resolved to contribute their very utmost Assistance.

All this my good Friend readily engaged for, and also took upon him the Office of Agent to both Parties; upon which they entered into a voluntary Covenant with each other, and likewise to Mr. Stardall, upon the Penalty of very heavy Fines, to maintain the three Years Subfeription good.

This I was no sooner informed of, but I was carry'd and introduced to them by my Friend in form; to the Intent that I might privately render them my grateful Acknowledgments for this Bounty: When they received me very courteously, and confirm'd to me the above Refolution; but indeed absolutely forbid me to make the least Ceremony of Thanks whatever. And which too, was not the Sum total of these good Ladies generous Favours: For my trufty Agent and chief Counsellor, having now taken a pretty genteel House for me, they also immediately took upon them to furnish it: And that also in the most polite and superb Taste. And now by a Custom of Court, which they themselves had begun, I every Day received a Number of very costly Presents; as Jewels, Plate, Pictures, and fo forth. Even the YAWHOOP himfelf, and all the Royal Family contributed their generous

nerous Portions towards me, in like manner. Infomuch that in less than fix Months Time. I accounted myself posses'd of Goods and other precious Effects, to the Value of fourteen or fifteen thousand Pounds English Money .- The most easy and expeditious Way of acquiring Riches, I ever before or fince met with.

But being now fettled in my new House, my Friend Stardall recommended to me a very trusty, sensible and prudent Gentleman to managemy Household Affairs for me, in the Quality of House-Steward; and which I defired might be carry'd on with all the Decency that could be, without the least Luxury or Prodigality. I kept no Servant but what was really useful and. necessary; and my Tables and Cellars were never furnished with aught but wholesome and nourishing Viands and Liquors: So that all foolish Knicknacks were absolutely excluded any Admission within my Walls: And for a further Report of all my future Proceedings, I must refer my Readers to the Contents of my next Chapter, &c.

> CHAP. H 2

CHAP. VI.

Containing an Introduction to the History of Puppet-Island.

TO W our good Author the Captain, being happily fettled in his princely Abode, and most sufficiently provided for; not only with worldly necessary Pelf; but also with a more scarce and valuable Jewel; and of such an one, which perhaps the Sovereign of Puppet-Island could not himself boast of: I mean a noble, humane, honest and fincere Friend! who had generously raised him from the most helplefs, pitiful, and diffrefs'd Condition, void of any other Motive, but that of delighting to do Good, and to affift his poor Fellow-Creatures in Adversity .- An old-fashion'd English Virtue (of past Ages) but now, greatly out of Vogue by those pretty Moderns of both Sexes, who run affectedly mad in the Study and Pursuit of French Delicacy: I fay, the Captain being thus happily provided for, we shall now, just note to our Readers, that it may be worthy their most folid Reflexions, when they call to Mind, what a wonderful fudden and extreme Transition, this Gentleman providentially felt, in the Change of his fo much different Situation and Fortune. Who

can look back to his so perilous and wretched State, when he so dreadfully launched forth from his Ship into the raging Sea, in all the Horrors of that frightful Storm; and keeping him Company thro' the uncomfortable Vicissitudes of that dangerous and miserable Voyage; but must think this fortunate Exaltation, a providential Reward for his unseigned Resignation to, and ready Trust in that Divine Power, which alone could work so great a Miracle in his Behalf?

But, as some may think this a Digression of too grave a Cast; we shall beg leave to change that Name, into the Appellation of a Presace, and Dedication to the Public; and an Advertisement; or any other Title, that may hereaster seem most suitable and agreeable. For as we are now going to treat of a new Kind of Matter, and to change our Strain, from Biography only, to a Mixture of History and Biography together; we apprehend that our Critical Readers may expect some small kind of a Presace to it: And which we shall here present you with as follows.

It is doubtless the Duty of every good Subject to contribute as much as in him lies, by all honest Means, to improve, affist and enrich his own Country, by every Opportunity and lawful Method that may present itself before him. And 'tis with this View, that we have here taken the Pains to transcribe and methodize the irregular, but most useful and entertaining Journal of Captain Silvius Greenland: And which, our Readers will certainly find, has something as novelous, and worth reading in it, as any Modern-History, that can boast a true English Father, for many Years past.

And we shall here be honest enough to confels, that when we first set ourselves to work, in the Regulation of this most useful History, we had fomething very much refembling Interest in View: Which, like a Whip and a Spur to a dull Kefel, was a proper Instrument towards improving our Speed. And if the Sale of this Work should surpass our great Expectations, we shall very readily admit the Success of it to be first owing to the Good-Nature, Tafte, and Judgment of our Readers. And next to the Merit of the Captain (the Original Author of this Journal) for we can honestly affure the Public, that we neither write for Fame nor. Pleasure; but folely with a View (after naming our own dear Interest) to serve and oblige the World, And we shall further add, that it is our real Opinion (in order to expedite the Runof the first four or five Impressions) that it will be as great a Scandal for any Library (great of (mall)

d

I

small) to be without the Possession of this Work; as it would, to be without the Practice of Piety, or Tom Thumb the Great, or Pamela, or Amelia, or fack the Giant-Killer, or any other useful Book.

But, however, if, after Six Months Experience, we should find the Public so obstinate (not to give it a worse Epithet on this provoking Occasion), as not to approve this our accurate and judicious History; we have, Thanks be to Heaven and the ingenious Author of it, one Way left in Store, which will infallibly force them both to buy it and like it too; (whether they will or not.) And this being an absolute new Scheme, and entirely a Secret to all People in Europe, except the Author of it. and those who have read his Works and Advertisements; we shall, if we find Occasion for it, pursue his modest Method: And acquaint the Public (with the greatest Assurance) that our unparalleled History is now translating into * thirty, forty, or fifty different Languages. And this new and beautiful Method will forcibly give you fuch a high Opinion of our Work, that those who before, may have neither read it, nor ever defired to read it, will afterwards be dying with Impatience for that unspeakable Pleasure: Tho'

^{*} Read the Advertisements of the Author of the Life of the Earl of Stair, 1750.

ful Method that may present itself before him. And 'tis with this View, that we have here taken the Pains to transcribe and methodize the irregular, but most useful and entertaining Journal of Captain Silvius Greenland: And which, our Readers will certainly find, has something as novelous, and worth reading in it, as any Modern-History, that can boast a true English Father, for many Years past.

And we shall here be honest enough to confels, that when we first set ourselves to work, in the Regulation of this most useful History, we had fomething very much refembling Interest in View: Which, like a Whip and a Spur to a dull Kefel, was a proper Instrument towards improving our Speed. And if the Sale of this Work should surpass our great Expectations, we shall very readily admit the Success of it to be first owing to the Good-Nature, Tafte, and Judgment of our Readers. And next to the Merit of the Captain (the Original Author of this Journal) for we can honeftly affure the Public, that we neither write for Fame nor. Pleasure; but folely with a View (after naming our own dear Interest) to serve and oblige the World. And we shall further add, that it is our real Opinion (in order to expedite the Runof the first four or five Impressions) that it will be as great a Scandal for any Library (great of (mall)

u

th

th

yo

W

de

In

the

small) to be without the Possession of this Work; as it would, to be without the Practice of Piety, or Tom Thumb the Great, or Pamela, or Amelia, or Jack the Giant-Killer, or any other useful Book.

But, however, if, after Six Months Experience, we should find the Public so obstinate (not to give it a worfe Epithet on this provoking Occasion), as not to approve this our accurate and judicious History; we have, Thanks be to Heaven and the ingenious Author of it, one Way left in Store, which will infallibly force them both to buy it and like it too; (whether they will or not.) And this being an absolute new Scheme, and entirely a Secret to all People in Europe, except the Author of it. and those who have read his Works and Advertisements; we shall, if we find Occasion for it, pursue his modest Method: And acquaint the Public (with the greatest Assurance) that our unparalleled History is now translating into * thirty, forty, or fifty different Languages. And this new and beautiful Method will forcibly give you fuch a high Opinion of our Work, that those who before, may have neither read it, nor ever defired to read it, will afterwards be dying with Impatience for that unspeakable Pleasure: Tho'

^{*} Read the Advertisements of the Author of the Life of the Earl of Stair, 1750.

at the same Time, like the aforesaid Author, we may find it extremely difficult to vend a Sufficiency to pay the Expence of our witty Advertisements only.

We must also further observe, that those Historiographers who have blended their Histories with the most agreeable Stories, have always been the most admired by the Generality of their Readers. And I must own too, that I am one of this Sort of Readers: Because I am of Opinion that those Authors who barely confine themselves to a common Description of the People, Things, or Places which they are then treating of; cannot present to their Readers. that agreeable Variety, which we apprehend is contained in this kind of Entertaining Relations. Befides, as those little Histories are, as it were, engrafted in the general Work, under conspicuous Titles, those Readers who like not the A. musement of these instructive Tales, may pass'em by at Pleasure. Nor do we look upon this Method as the least Imposition upon our nicest critical Reader, for this Reason: It is absolutely the Duty and Bufiness of every Author, who is engaged in this kind of Writing, to convey to his Readers, by the most effectual and the most pleafant Means that he can invent, the truest and justest Ideas of the Nature, Temper, and Practice of those People whom he has undertook to describe.

And

A

In

th

ou

th

lit

th

do

Po

or

A

In

Vi

fi

And which cannot be better done, than by the Intermixture of these short Histories. Because they are so many good Pictures (or at least ought to be) of the different Characters which they produce. And which are, in all Probability, thereby, better painted, than otherwise they would be. For these, if they are welldone Characters, may be properly called, finish'd Portraits at full Length: When all others, may only be supposed as so many slight Sketches: And tho' the masterly Touch ought to be seen in all, yet those who are Judges, as well as those who are not, will find more Pleasure in the Review of a well finished Piece, than that of the finest Sketch. And so we proceed to our Author.

CHAP VII.

Containing a Brief and Historical Account of some few necessary Points.

HERE I think it not improper to give you some little Account of the Natives in general, according to my suture Observations and Discoveries. But I shall not pretend to affirm that it is all here set down in sull and regular Characters; because, as I have blended my Journal with many remarkable Histories, which I recorded (and which do still stand here)

H 5

as they arose to my Knowledge, my Readers must compound for any Deficiency in this Place, in regard to their further Expectations.

Their Constitutional-Laws, Government, Religion, Politicks, Trade, Manufactories, Navigations, Customs, Pleasures, &c. you may here expect to find some little Account of, under distinct Heads: And other Matters, as they happen'd in course of Time, and Place, to present themselves before me. And therefore, I shall not further attempt to expatiate upon them here.

This Island, as I before hinted, is situate in a very happy and pleasant Part of the Temperate-Zone, either North or South; and abounding with all Sorts of human Necessaries.

The Sovereign-Sway is partly Hereditary and partly Elective; for if the Yawhoop be a wife and affectionate Prince, they will frop at nothing to serve or oblige him. But if he once divests himself of that Paternal-Love, and strikes at Tyranny, they hold themselves acquited of all former Vows, and Duty of Allegiance; and having remonstrated their Griefs; without Redress; they quickly pull him from his Throne, and from their own Hearts together, and immediately endeavour to set up a better.

Tied Their own native Language,

Their Laws are many of them very fine, and mighty humane; but most of them (by the Lenity of the Government, and other evil Proceedings) are wretchedly abused in the Execution of them. Every Rogue has his Friend; and though it is contrary to the Laws of the Island, that any one who is found guilty of Wilful Murder, should be pardon'd; yet if the Offender be rich, it is now, very rare to see one of them executed. And in all other Convictions whatsoever, Money is a most executed Assistant.

Religions they have many, but the only one that is establish'd, and approved by the present Laws, is called Antipetrian; and which is very well calculated; and entirely free from all Idolatry, ignorant Superstition, and uncharitable Inhumanity. And I must confess that the Old Testament is as well known to them, as to any Nation upon the Face of the Earth.

Their Manufacturies are, perhaps, equal in Number and Goodness, to those of any Kingdom in the known World: And the Generality of the People are as ingenious and industrious as in any Country whatever.

They have feveral Universities and Great Schools, where all Branches of useful Learning are as well known and taught, as perhaps in any part of Europe. Their own native Language,

being

being, I believe, the most uncouth, and immethodical amongst them.

There is a mighty Difference both in the Temper and Constitution of the Natives; and that too, in both Sexes: The common People, of each Sort, are called Stouters; and indeed, not improperly; according to the English Sense of that Word; for perhaps a flouter fort of People is not to be found upon the Face of the Earth. They are hardy, bold, and generous; very industrious, noble in their Natures; open, free, humane and tender in their Dispositions: If they have any thing amiss and blameable in their Manners and Behaviours, it is more the Fault of Cuftom, and their Illiteracy, than any natural Inclination: Those of better Education, being generally, as Nervous in their Understanding and Capacity, as they are in their perfonal Abilities and natural Constitutions. Not but, like all other Nations, they have their Faults and their Foibles too fufficiently.

And fince it is the Custom, particularly in England, to give the Ladies the Upper-hand, and Preserence, in most things they do; to shew that I still retain my Native-Complaisance and Breeding; I shall here pursue that most laudable, and customary-Method: I now mean, in speaking of them first.

on after Continuent, or Contraded on And

The fine Ladies in Puppet-Island, are called in their own Language, Glare-Clappers; but what is there meant by the Word (Clapper) I could never find out, with all my utmost Skill and Endeavour; but I have often imagined, though I confess, I have no Authority for it, but my own Conjectures; that the Puppets might formerly have had fome Correspondence with the Europeans, and out of pure Burlefque to the French (as they call the fine Ladies Belles) the Puppets might possibly think it more confonant to Character, if they should correct that Term, and call their Ladies, Clappers: because Bells without Clappers, are certainly very infignificant Things; and being thereby quite barren of any pompous Sound (or, indeed, of any Sound at all) they might perhaps be more properly distinguish'd by some other Epithet, and which Deficiency, I could not but suppose the Pupp ts had thus endeavour'd to improve, by constituting in its stead, the Word Clapper.

But howfoever well, or ill, this Suggestion is here grounded, I must needs say, that the Puppet-Ladies are excessive fair and beautiful: ambitious in their Natures, yielding in their Tempers; and lovely in their Persons; fond of Show, Flattery and Precedence; and also mortally averse to the ill-bred Attempts of either Confraint, Controlment, or Contradiction. And as Heaven, without Doubt, originally design'd them for the great Use of Pleasure, chiefly; so do they, there, seem naturally, to answer most that great End; and to adhere to that one Point, preserable to all others.—But more of these hereaster. For if we were now speaking of our English Ladies, those sew short Truths were enough to damn our Work; and scarce would ever be pardon'd.

The Men of Fortune here, are many of them a little too much addicted to idle, foolish and effeminate Affectation; Mediocrity being as it were, even in that Point, naturally adopted to the Tafie of the middling People, as well as their Fortunes: For very few of the Rich observe any such neceffary Method in either their public, or private Oeconomy. For want of which, vast Numbers of the greatest Estates in the Island, are fo excessive fickly, and consumptive, that they are frequently obliged to be disposed of, by their good Masters for a certain Time; as the Parish-Brats are very often in England: That is to fay, put forth to Suckle, at fo much per Annum. For, having their noble Constitutions quite choaked up as it were, with the huge repeated phlegmatic Portions of Affes-milk (which were continually drench'd down them, by their fimple, unworthy, and unfkilful Owners) they are at length (at the earnest Petition of their

poor impatient and undone Creditors; and by the learned Prescription of a convoked Confultation of just fuch wife Physicians as are to be met within Westminster-Hall, in Term Time. order'd to take the Air; under the most found Direction of about half a Dozen, or half a Score wet and dry Nurses: Who are order'd to feed and starve them, and physick them, and cloath them; and otherwife discipline and regulate them; as their own Discretion may inspire them. During which, these Wife-Acre Nurses, seldom fail to appropriate all their old. Cast-off's to their own private Use and Benefit : much after the fame Manner as fome Schoolmatters charge very large Accounts to the Parents, or Friends of their Scholars for New-Books, &c. which after a small Time, are loft; and the old fly Syntax knowing how to find them again they are carefully collected and deposited till a suitable Opportunity shall prefent itself; and then, again and again, they help out the Catalogues of a second and third Bill, to fresh Purchasers; to the great Credit and Advantage of these honest and industrious Inftructors.

It is no new Thing, in Puppet-Island, for young Gentlemen of very great Estates to spend their Fortunes before they come to them: That is to say, those who are under Guardage,

Captain, GREENLAND

by the Deaths of their Fathers, &c. So that in a very short Time, after they come of Age, they are frequently either to be found in a Prifon for Debt; or otherwise, gone into some Foreign Country, for fear of one.

And the original Cause of those ruinous Miscarriages, by my Observation, I must attribute to the weak Indulgences of their Parents in their more tender Days; for having been bred up from their Cradles, without any Check to their childish Desires; their wilful Humour, by a long Habit, is now fixt absolute, and by a continual Gratification of their unwarrantable Wishes, they never before, having an Occasion to weigh the Consequences, their childish Proceedings still keep Place: When Manhood, and Years, should instruct them much better. And we must here add, that

It is a dangerous Thing for a Man of Fortune, to fuffer his Children too much out of his Sight; because, either the mercenary Views of Servants, &c. or the fashionable Flattery of those of higher Class, seldom fail to conceal their Faults; hurt their Morals; and encourage their Vices. And to prevent an establish'd evil-Habitude, no Fault in the Behaviour of a Child ought by any Means to pass

pass unregarded, or unpunish'd. Frequent useful Lessons; a good, and uncorrupted Education; and a little prudent Correction, when they deserve it, are the best Portions that a sensible Man can possibly bestow upon his Children. For, by the Assistance of these, and with good Natural Parts, a Man may acquire a Fortune; but without them, he will always cut a most contemptible, or dangerous Figure; and if you put ever so good a Fortune into his Hands, he will (a Thousand to one) make a very bad Use of it.

CHAP. VIII.

Of the Constitutional Laws of the ISLAND of Puppers.

Apprehend that there is no other effectual Way of treating of the Constitutional-Laws and Government of this Island, than by setting out at the very Foundation of them; and so to trace them regularly and occasionally: And which I shall here endeavour to do in as brief a Manner as I can, according to my best Intelligence.

The Sovereignty of Puppet-Island, as I have hinted before, is partly Hereditary, and partly Elective.

Elective. Which Point was settled and underftood by the forming of a most Solemn Covenant between the Yawhoop and his Subjects: Which they mutually enter'd into, for the Interest, Support and Preservation of each other; and which both Sides do most sacredly swear to

perform.

By Virtue of this great Contract between the Yawhoop and his People, the latter are allowed to felect from amongst themselves a certain stipulated Number of fuch capable Gentlemen as they may conceive most worthy and proper to represent their whole Island, in one grand Affembly; as in many Parts of Germany, and feveral other Places. Where their chief Duty and Buliness is to confider, settle, and rectify every effectual Method, that can be devised. for the Honour, Interest, Safety and Welfare. of their Sovereign; and of the Island in general, or of any particular Part thereof. And if any peculiar Grievance should appear to them, either National or Personal, within their proper Jurisdiction, even though it should be offered by their Sovereign himself, their absolute Duty (by the Laws of the Island) is not to overlook it on any Account whatever. But before they proceed on any other Business, this Grievance is to be redreffed.

pet

M

In

T

an

je

H

V

th

A

i

r-

ni:

h

1

And these Gentlemen are called in the Puppet Language, the Island-Puppets: For in their Mouths is contain'd the Viva Voce of the whole Island. And being selected by their different Towns and Districts, thus to represent them; and to speak their Opinions, Petitions, and Objections, concerning all Public Matters, in this Honourable Affembly; they have the first Voice in every Law that is made. So that, if the Sense of their Majority be against it, the Attempt, or Defign of that Scheme, be what it will, can be of Non-Effect. But if it pass in full Probation; then is it preferr'd to the Confideration and Opinion of another great Affembly, called the Yawhaves; who are the Grandees of the Island. And who are also, as properly the Guardians of the Perogative-Royal, as the Island-Puppers are of the Liberties and Properties of the Subject.

But, in the passing of all Laws, we must observe, that, as the Yawhaves have a Negative upon the Island-Puppets; so likewise, has the Yawhoop a Negative upon them both. So that, there can no Scheme possibly pass into a general and National-Law, without the joint Concurrence of the whole three Powers. Nor has the Yawhoop a Shilling Revenue from the Hand, but what he must first ask, by Law, of these

these Island-Puppets. But still, what may feem very furprizing to fome People, is, that altho' he can command no Part of their Property, but what they generously give him; yet, is he now got Master of such an Art, (that is to fay, his Ministers are; and which is the same Thing) that he can, thereby, fish out of his Subjects Pockets, their very last Shilling: And though it should be damnably against their Wills: yet, shall it be with their own Consent too. And, although, this may be to some People absolutely paradoxical, yet I can assure you that it is eafily to be made out. And which may by and by be feen. For while they went on according to this legal, honest and useful Plan, as was understood to be the true Meaning and Intention of the abovementioned Covenant; Things flourish'd and prosper'd with them: The Island grew extremely rich, and prodigious powerful. Those neighbouring Parts of the World, which were then known to them, envy'd their Happiness, courted their Friendship, and dreaded their Power. If ever their Fleets departed from their Ports, they feldom return'd without either Peace or Conquest. Honour and Courage fired their Hearts: and the Love of Renown was dearer to them than their Blood. Often were they invaded by

by po their capabl ing o Cultiv ble an Temp Right felf co

Ch. 8

ever t nity i or w Mini or gi

In

were

difpl In rejoi and lieve

duce

ed a and ole, Ear

Ma

nev

n

,

5

0

e

S

1

;

by powerful Fleets and Armies; even treble their Numbers; but no earthly Terror was capable of disheartning their Courage; or shaking of their well-temper'd Virtues. In the Cultivation of their Arts, they were indisatigable and laborious; very hospitable in their Tempers; and in Defence of their King, their Rights and their Privileges, not even Death it-self could move them.

In these Days, their Trade and Navigation were all the first Points in View; and whenever they found their Sovereign's Right and Dignity insulted, or invaded, by Foreign-Enemies; or was otherwise imposed upon by his own Ministers at Home; they would never leave, or give up the Cause, until the First were reduced to Reason; and the Latter were either displaced, or punished.

In this happy State did this flourishing Island tooice, even for Ages; and while the Yawhoop and his People, went Hand in Hand, they believed that the Force of the whole Globe, united against them, were not their equal Match.

And as a Proof of their eminent Riches; and of the loyal and liberal Spirits of the Peole, I may confidently affirm, that no Spot of
Earth in the whole known World, of the fame
Magnitude, ever did; and I verily believe,
ever will, advance their Sovereign, so much

Money,

Money, in so short a Time, as they have many Times done; and all too, by their own voluntary Acts.

CHAP. IX.

Some Account of the Religion, or rather the Religions of the Puppets: viz. The Peterians and Antipeterians. Especially of the whimsical Doctrine of the Latter.

THE Puppets have many Religions a-I mongst them, but the two Chiefest are distinguished by the Terms of Peterians and Antipeterians. The Government of the Island is, at this Time, regulated by Antipeterian-Laws; which is a Religion purely weeded out of the Peterian System; for this last is said now to become greatly Corrupted with the groffest Errors: Such as violent Cruelty, Persecution, Idoliatry, Ostentation, Want of Brotherly Charity, Hypocrify, Tyranny, &c. &c. by which malignant and deadly Impressions, they bear the Antipeterians a most inveterate and mortal Hate. And indeed the Doctrine of the Peterian-Faith is at this Time comething extraordinary: And, it is very plea-

fant

1

b

tl

p

g

ro

ar

th

th P

CI

R

fei

th

fo

me

he

po

fee

wa

and

pet

per

Co

I.

ny

vn

er

Z.

-

be

2-

eft

ins

he

be-

re-

his

ted

el-

ant

ıy,

m-

in-

the

me

ea-

ant

fant to hear the continual Contest that is made between the Peterians and Antipeterians, concerning the Doctrine of Hell, or rather Hells; the First of these being not satisfy'd with the Perturbations, which are caused by the Suppopositions of one-Hell only; but out of their great Duty and Love for Heaven, in order to maintain their Profelytes from any kind of Error, if possible; and that they shall be good and righteous, whether they will or not, at their more than Eternal-Peril to the Contrary. they have outdone all the Doctrine of the Prophets of Old, the Saints and Apostles of Christ, even from the first Establishment of Religion to their own Time; by positively asferting and maintaining that there are no less than two Hells; and that one of these Hells, is fo commodiously situate (for their Clergy I mean) that not a Saint can go to Heaven, but he must, per-force, whether he will or not, pophis poor Soul into this damn'd Place: Where it feems it must lie according to their Doctrine, wallowing and flinking in the midft of Fire and Brimstone, and Pitch and Tar, and Saltpetre, and Char-coal, and Bees-wax and Turpentine, and Squibs and Crackers, and other Combustibles, till Peter himself (the head Man of their Church) or some of his commission'd Officers,

Officers, are pleafed to fend an absolute Express to the Princely Sovereign of this same first Hell, and all his Substitutes, commanding that they shall be immediately released; and for which good and potent Deed you are to understand that the surviving Relations of this imprison'd Soul must very sufficiently pay for. Otherwise, they must lie there, broiling, stewing and fuffocating to Eternity, without the least Hope of ever being released. But being once enlarged by Peter'd Authority, they immediately fet out for Heaven that Moment; where, and in that dingy Condition (which they fay they are much the sweeter and better for) they fafely arrive foon after, without the least Let or Molestation whatsoever.

But what we may observe, as a little cruel and ill-natur'd of this same Powerful Peter, is, that although he pretends (nay and absolutely swears it too) that he has got a Master-Key to both these Hells, and can do whatsoever he pleases in either of them; yet, he will suffer the poor Antiperteian-Souls to lie in the Midst of these worst of Torments, without affording them least Pity or Assistance imaginable, or even troubling his Head the least about them; and which, we may conceive is a very cruel Neglect and indeed a Want of Natural-charity.

But

C

m

P

m

fh

th

01

V

in

tl

u

I

il

0

1

1

1

e

h

r

e

d

0

e

e

f

n

n

d

-

t

But however this Doctrine the Antipeterians make so great a Joke of, that some of them in a ludicrous Manner, proclaim that this same Peter, their chief and mighty Patron, is in the most amicable and strict League and Friendship with the Prince of the other Hell; and that the Hell we have been just speaking of, was only a Chimærical one; raised by the Contrivance of these two Chiefs, and their Abettors, in order to bring Grists to both their Mills.

For, by the People's earnest Endeavour for the Enfranchisement of their demised Friend's unhappy Souls, out of this imaginary Hell; they almost drop of Course insensibly into the other Hell; fo that this second Hell seems only a kind of Bubble; a little like the South-Sea Scheme in the Year Nineteen and Tweenty, in England; or like the Chariatable Corporation Plan; or the Naturalization-Bill; or the Missisppi in France; where all are fure to be Losers, but those who are at the very Bottom of the Plot. But howfoever odd this Doctrine may feem to fome of our Readers; it is confidently affirm'd upon that Island, that by the indefatigable Industry of the Peterian Clergy, this Doctrine hath gotten fuch Footing that the Yearly Profits arising from their Freeing of those poor deluded People's Souls, only, amounts to many Millions Vol. III.

Millions of Money.—A very profitable Trade, indeed! and by no means ought to be loft.

But on the Establishment of this second Hell, and some other Articles full as good, the Peterians found it impracticable, without the Addition and Affistance of some little Terrestrial Hells, of their own Creation and Kindling; wherefore they took upon them to burn alive all those who fell into their Hands, and would not believe as they were pleased to have them. But those Proceedings did them very little Service towards the Increase of their Number : for they were look'd upon by the Antipeterians, for whose fole Sake and Conversion it was contrived, to be so near to the Proceedings of the Devils themselves, that they rather ridiculed and contemn'd them, than embraced or approved them.

There are many other Sects and Opinions among the People of this Island, which I do not think worthy my Trouble of noting here; every Person who is capable of or shall happen to hit upon any Thing new, sets up himself for Founder and Patron of some extravagant Opinion; and never fails of drawing whole Multitudes of Fools after them: And who are, thereby, exhorted to believe what neither their Original himself, nor any of his deep Disciples can either

,

al ;

e

n. r-

10

or

n+

he

p-

ns

do

re;

to

for

pi-

lti-

re-

gi-

can

her

either demonstrate, comprehend, or even conceive. But the more mysterious and dark it appears, the more Orthodoxically-Religious it must certainly be; for the chief Support of all Religion is its vast *Profundity*.

CHAP. X.

Containing a Rhapsody of Puppet Customs, Superstitions, &c. &c.

THEN the Puppets gain some little Advantage of their Enemies in Battle, they are fo extravagantly transported with their Success, that you would imagine it was a very extraordinary Thing, and that fuch a Confequence very feldom happens to them. But to fhew you that they are not very deep Philosophers at those fortunate Junctures, I must take Notice that the News of a Victory, immediately and absolutely overpowers their rational Parts. and proclaims a fecond Conquest as effectually, and fuddenly over their Reason and Senses, as Powder and Ball could possibly have done it over their Carcases in the Field of Battle. From a general Gravity and Stilness, which, prior to the Arrival of this rare News, naturally took Place in all Ranks of People; in an In-I 2 **flant**

flant of Time, after the Publication of their good Fortune of War, fo suddenly and wonderfully are the Spirits and Minds of Men to be wrought by Trifles, that the Transition of Modes on this Occasion, seem like an instantaneous Elevation from the most profound Melancholy, to the highest Degree of frantic Madness. And so furiously did this kind of Epidemic Rage continue to operate amongst them for some Days, that you fee nothing committed by them, but the most ridiculous Follies, and crazy Antick-Tricks. Such as affembling together in large Groups, and in a riotous and outrageous Manner, turning their most choice Laws into Burlefque, Ridicule and Abuse: By roaring about the Streets in a most frightful and ungovernable Manner, stopping their Fellow-Subjects vi & armis, with great Clubs and other dangerous Weapons, and forcing them to give them Money to heighten their Infolence, ere they will fuffer them to pursue their intended Business. And on the slightest Pretence that may be, will affault other People's Houses; by breaking their Windows, or tearing down whatever Timbers are open and liable to their unreasonable and unlawful Rage. And then, by burning them in a most inhuman and provoking Strain before their own Doors: Drinking, dancing, and shouting round the unlawful Flames Flames in fuch tumultuous and elevated Fathion, as though they had been acting the most laudable and beneficial Scene imaginable. This they fometimes continue for feveral Days and Nights together; obliging all People without Respect to either their Persons, or their Circumstances, to illuminate their Houses in a most splendid and extravagant Manner; at far more Expence than many of them can conveniently spare. But no Matter, it must be se, those within Doors, let them be never so wise, grave, or prudent in themselves, must, on these transporting Occasions, publish a most luminous and splendid Sympathy of Error within, to pacify those without. Otherwise, greater Extremes would immediately be proceeded to; the evil Confequence of which no one could pretend to foretell. And the same Excess of dangerous Rage attends upon their general Rcfentment, (when they are once moved) as this I have fhewn on their general Joy; and therefore the Consequences thereof are doubtless much more to be dreaded : As the Subject itfelf is certainly more powerful, aggravating, and not fo easily cool'd. And although these People are naturally fierce and obdurate in revenging public Abuses; yet the State-Minifters are feldom any wife alarmed with any Apprehensions of Danger therefrom, till the Storm

e

3

g

There are as many Political Parties in this Island, as there are Religious ones: And which are as ridiculously bigotted to their own Opinions, as People can possibly be, for whatsoever Party they are pleased to espouse, it is no easy Matter to make them believe that they have, or ever had, on that Side the Question, the least Fault to complain of. And on the contrary Side, they are as fure to have nothing elfe but Faults. Their Sovereigns, their Princes, their Generals, their Admirals, their Patriots and Ministers, and even down to Fidlers and Fortune-tellers, are always either the brightest Angels or the blackest Devils, for they are utter Strangers to any kind of Medi-They are above being put out of their old Road; and so superstitiously fixt are they to their Family-Errors, that (for an Instance of the Truth of this Affertion) because one of their former Yawhoops was remarkable for a great Hump on his Nose, all those whose Forefathers had affected his particular Principles and InM.

h-

ny at

y-

of

nd

his

ch ni-

er

fy

e.

he

n-

ng

n-

a-

rs

he

or

i-

ir

y

:3

of

a

2-

d

1-

Interest, would absolutely wear the Index Sign of their fuccessive Loyalty in their own Faces. In Order for which, you might frequently fee them beating their Nofes against a Post or an old Wall, to make it swell in the Middle; that it might the more confpicuously proclaim their continued Interest in his peculiar Cause.

But for all this, Puppet-Island is perhaps the only Place in the whole World for a bad Man to live in, who, after practifing all the villainous Tricks upon Earth, has a Mind to leave a great good Character behind him: Which may be recorded and imposed upon the whole Island, for the Value of about ten or twenty Shillings English Money. This is done by Means of certain circulating Papers not unlike to our common News-Papers. And when a penurious Bite, who has, perhaps, cheated and defraud. ed all he ever dealt with, and by that Means has accumulated a mighty Fortune, his next Heir not being willing that the bufy talking World should have it in their Power to cast ill-natur'd Reflections on his deceased Benefactor's Memory, prefently prevents it by this infallible, easy, and cheap Method. The following is a true and exact Translation of one of those public Chronicles; which was done from one that was exhibited immediately after the Death of a very eminent Sharper of Quality: Who was alfo

I 4

also a very great Miser; a notable Sloven; a common Cheat : and a remarkable Brute .-Yesterday died advanced in Years, the Right Worshipful, universally lamented by all who had the Benefit and Pleasure of his Acquaintance; he was a Man of found Judgment, excellent Learning, and a piercing Understanding; he had a plain, easy, honest Deportment; was munificent in his Temper, and most fagacious and charitable in all his Proceedings. A Man of the ftricteft Honour, best Morals; and the purest Integrity in the whole Kingdom. He was a tender Father; an affectionate Husband, a true Friend, and an Honour and an Ornament, both to his Name, his Family, his Dignity and his Country.

Thus you fee that a Person who could not acquire even a tolerable Character, when living; shall, for the Value of twenty Shillings, or less, after he is dead, establish a most shining and amiable one, on Record, for ever, all through the Kingdom. But I cannot here omit one very remarkable Custom, and which, too, is here established by Law, in this Island; and as I imagine that it will afford my judicious Readers some little Matter of Suprize and Entertainment, I shall present it to them as it appeared

to me.

CHAP.

II:

a.

ht

n-

it,

t;

3-

A

d

1.

13

S

t

į

CHAP. XI.

Containing the History of a very astonishing.

Masquerade; and the Cause thereof.

A FTER I had been upon the Island some fmall Time, and it being now about the middle of their Winter; I happen'd one Morning to lie in Bed a little longer than ordinary; when going into the Street, on some particular Occasion, to my very great Surprize, I saw every body, Men, Women and Children, all with difmal fmear'd Faces, and very melancholy Countenances. For fome Time, I could not perfuade myfelf but that I was convey'd by Magic, into some Part of Æthiopia; and began to be under fo much Concern about it, that by the Aprehensions, of my own Fears, only, I have some Reason to believe, that I really dragged a more woeful Countenance than any of those black-faced Puppets I am now speaking of. But however, it was impossible for me not to enquire the Cause of this so difmal and general a Change. When, I was informed, that it was a kind of formal, and National Masquerade, once a Year; and forced upon the Peo. ple by a very particular and strict Law, occasioned as follows:

I believe I might have observed, already, that the People of this Island are naturally of an obstinate, boisterous Temper; and when once irritated to any extraordinary Degree, they are not very eafily appealed again: Now, it happen'd some few Years before I came there. I know not how long, that one of their former Yawhoops, not happening to please them in his general Behaviour, they made no more to do, but whipt him up; and after keeping him a Prisoner as long as they thought proper, they brought him to a Tryal, as they called it; and there charged him, before his Face, of being a Pickpocket, and a Houfe-breaker, and a Diffembler, and a Murderer; and of feveral other very heinous Crimes: But the chiefest Evidence that appeared against him, at this Tryal, T was told, was the Head of an old Stick, which they had lent him to carry in his Hand, instead of a Scepter. And which Head being fluck on, with a bit of Sealing-Wax, or Cobler's Wax, or fome fuch Thing, as the poor Yawboop (being ignorant of their damn'd Trap) happen'd to ffrike the flick against the Ground. a little harder than ordinary, loofen'd the Wax, and off jumpt the Head, before them all. Upon which, they immediately got up, and fwore all of them, a Thousand Oaths that he was plainly guilty of every Charge against him: And II.

ly,

of

ien

ley

it

re,

ner

his

lo,

a

ey

nd.

a

if-

er

ce

T

ch

ad k

3

1-

1

۲,

-

,

S

d

And that this was a providential Omen, and a fufficient Proof of it; as well as a very lively Document for the Manner of his Execution; which they immediately decreed should be, to chop him to Death with a Carpenter's great Hatchet. And that the Executioner should begin first with his Head; and next, with his Arms, and so forth downward; and that, if he lived after his Head, and his Arms, and his Legs, and his Thighs were all chopt off, then his Genitals were to be taken from him, to prevent his Getting any more Children: After which, he was to be cut up and quartered; and a Quarter of him to be fent to each Quarter of the World, to prevent his coming together again. But, to their very great Amazement, they no fooner deprived him of his Head, as above, but they found it superfluous to hack and carve any more of him. And fo they put him into a Coffin, and as it is faid, privately buried him, according to the Custom of the Island.

After this strange Proceeding, as we may well suppose, there were great Murmurings and Disputes held amongst the People in general, concerning the Death of their Yawhoop. Some rejoiced, and others were forrowful; but however, though it was some Years after this, be-

fore

WOV.

fore they would let the eldest Prince mount his Father's Throne; yet, he was no fooner restored, than they who so lately had affaulted the Lion fo fiercely, and had robbed him of his Regal-Den; now, threw off his borrow'd Shape, and covered themselves with Lamb's and Affes Skins; thinking, thereby to have faved their slinking Carcases, but there were many of them, nevertheless, smelt out. And the rest of them grew so very crouching, that they would now canonize the very Man for a Saint, whom they had before, thus executed for a Thief and a Murderer. And to make the Memory of this black-Act more horrible and lasting they made a Law, that they would annually, from that Time, dedicate that fatal Day, to a strict and general Mourning: And that it should be penal not to black your Face and look louring and forrowful, fo that, in every Street, you might fee them rubbing their Nofes in the Channels, and all other dirty Places; nay, and you must do it, to; even, notwithstanding you might have had an old penurious Parent, or other Relation, who had that Morning died, and left you an Estate of ten Thousand a Year.

Thus you may observe, that this strange and giddy People foon fuffer'd themselves, contraI.

nt

r

d is

d.

's e

e

d t

r

d

t

ŀ

ry to all Sense and Reason, to be rapidly hurried from one ridiculous Extreme, as unwarrantably, into another. - If the People of England were to commit fuch Extravagances, what would the World fay of them?

CHAP. XII.

Of the Puppets Dramatick - Entertainments, Poets and Players.

HE Puppets are extremely fond of all kinds of Publick-Entertainments; the chief of which I shall endeavour to give my Readers a very particular Account of, as far as I have been able to inform myself thereof. They are very skilful in Musick, Dancing, and many other useful and pleasing Amusements. But as for their Night-revelling and fuch like, we shall pass them over without the least Regard; and for their Love of Gaming, and its dire Effects, we shall distinctly speak of it elsewhere. So that, at present, we shall only treat of their fublimest and most profitable Entertainments: I mean their Dramatics; which are not unlike to those we have in the Theatre-Royal in England. And, indeed, they have also the Royal Sanction for what they exhibit near the Court.

Now, although the perfect Understanding of these learned Performances, were quite out of my Latitude; yet, by Observation, I found that many of the Puppets who pretended to be Critics in them, were generally of my Way of Thinking. In the first Place, they faid that these Places had the Yawhoop's Authority, for their learned instructive and moral Qualities: And therefore, were also worthy of the highest Encouragement: Because those Characters which were there exhibited, were looked upon as fo many Pictures in Real Life; and a powerful Invitation for all Youth to strive in a pleasing Emulation of the good and virtuous Ones; and as much to the contrary, that the eviland vicious Ones might be detested and avoided. But it was very evident that this good Design of their Drama was not supported as it ought: For it was obvious, even to me, that there were fo many Faults and Errors committed in the Controlment, Management, and Performance of these Designs, as in perhaps any of their kind in the known World. For as the greatest Part of these Writings are highly esteem'd by the most polite and learned Perfons of both Sexes in the Island; as being generally believed the most instructive, witty, and fublime Images of human Thoughts; fo one would imagine that those beautiful Performances

mances should be supported with the utmost Spirit and Dignity. But instead of this, they are frequently blended with Buffooneries and Mummery of the lowest Invention. And this Sufferance is not perhaps fo much the Fault of the Mannagers, as it is the Depravity of the Audience, in encouraging them; who can meanly, ignorantly, and contentedly rest satisfy'd to participate of the most gross Jumble of incoherent Nonsense, after being most elegantly feafted with the richest Offerings of Wit and fine Images Imaginable. But I do not here think it worth either my Time, or my Readers, to defcend to those Particulars. I shall therefore, for Brevity-fake, only acquaint you, that it is often fuch kind of stupid Stuff, as is to be met with in Bartholomew-Fair; as Rope-dancing. Tumbling, and many Antick-Tricks of low Mummery; intermixt with a little Jumping. Dancing, Singing, &c. And yet, it does not feem altogether characteristic with the Impartiality we have before profess'd, to pass by this Opportunity without taking fome Notice of the Nature of those Accidents which generally frequent the Puppet-Theatres.

If a Theatrical Audience were to be properly forted and class'd, I know not whether they wou'd not admit of twe nty different Sortments; and not above two of them in Fact, worthy to taste

taste of a right good Dramatic Entertainment. And these two Sorts, which our Readers at first fight may think a little ffrange, are the most Learned-Judicious; and the most Ignorant-Illiterate. The first of these we'll suppose are in High-Life, and the latter in Low-Life. For. whereas, the former Class of these wide Diftinctions can both difcern and understand their Beauties and their Faults, they are proportionably pleafed with the One, and able to correct the Other. And these are such, as in England, are called learned Critics; and who are certainly both of great Use, and Ornaments to a Theatre, by being both a Support and Encouragement to their Excellences (in either the Author, or Performer) and a proper Check to their Improprieties, and Absurdities. the Latter, I fay, being many of them the most Illiterate; do also frequently go there to be diverted with what they well know, themfelves, they don't understand, nor do pretend to it. Yet, Nature is fo prevalant in them, that when a beautiful Stroke of a Tragic-Author, is equally elevated by the true and powerful Performance of the ingenious Actor, the Passions rise in this Plebean, 'till his Soul is as fenfibly touch'd with the Strokes, as the Scholar's: And he participates as largely, in effect, as the Critic; though he is not so capable of de-

Z

p

T

al

th

W

tr

7

decyphering the Caufe of it. In Comedy, this Person is as suddenly and persectly affected with Wit and Humour, if it comes with his Comprehension, as the other: And is therefore, I apprehend, as worthy of the rich Entertainment he thus enjoys. But now, my Reader, where will you find the other eighteen Parts of this Hotchpotch Audience! We shall briefly reply for you, that, for a nearer and more perfect Probation, than running to Puppet-Island for it, let those Scrutineers who would have a just Idea of them, but turn their Eyes towards their own Theatres-Royal, and they may thereby be very eafily fatisfy'd. There may they find them, and divide them, as follows: And also, difcover, that they are all of them, foreign from any Design, or Desire of being entertain'd from the Stage. That is to fay,

Gentlemen, who come there to pick up Ladies; and Ladies who come there to be pick'd up, and to prey upon those Gentlemen: Beaux who come there to show their fine Airs, their fine Shapes, and fine Cloaths, to the Belles; and Belles who come there, to do the same to the Beaux. Some, who come to see the Play, with no other View than to find fault and be troublesome; and others, who know not otherwise how to dispose of either themselves or their Time.

Many other Divisions might be made in an English Audience with great Propriety; but as it may seem too bold and prolix in me to attempt it here, I shall submit the remaining Part of this easy Task to the Pleasure and Judgment of my judicious Readers. And so I shall step back to my History.

2

2

nifters

As I have again got footing on the Island of Puppets, my Readers, Lapprehend, need not to be remember'd, that themselves, with the following Scene, are likewise consequently transported thither, together: And that we are alfo now speaking of Puppet-Plays and Playhouses. And as many of those Compositions are of a kind of an historical Nature, and others of a more fublime Cast, representing the Lives and Actions of Kings, Princes, and Ministers; the late * Yawdaw and his good Brothers of the State, enacted an especial Law to prevent any Theatrical-Squibs and Serpents being flung at them, in particular, from the Stage: Because the Authors of those fort of Dramatic-Pieces are generally supposed by many of the Puppets to be Men of more that ordinary Speculation and Understanding; tho' feldom the richest; and therefore, the natural Genius of these Puppet-Wits frequently leads them to deal out their severest Satire, whenever they have a fair Opportunity for fo doing; the Mi-

* The first Minister.

t

f

misters, to stagnate all such Proceedings against themselves, made it next to Death and the Devil, for any Author to write the least Word against a Statesman of any Nation; to prevent any Allusion to themselves. But, they might write ten thousand Million of salse Encomiums upon them, if they pleased, and by so doing, there was no Harm done.

The Punishment usually inflicted on these prefumptuous Authors for reviling any State-Minister in their Writings; was, that the Piece, thus guilty, was first condemn'd as Blasphemous: And it was no less than Petit-Treason, afterwards, for any one to read it; and far worse than either High-Treason, or Murder, to dare to approve it. The Players are forbid to act it; and the Author himself is condemn'd to be flarv'd to Death, for his atrocious Audacity: And if any Person shall afterwards, through the prevailing Call of Pity, Humanity, Charity, or Compassion, (call it what you Please) offer him the least Affistance, he is sure to be treated for fo doing as the worst of Traitors, and an Enemy to the Government.

Now my generous Readers may easily reflect, that, in an Island famous for so great Plenty of all forts of the richest and best Food; and where the Inhabitants in general do also take so much Delight in good Eating and Drink-

fo

p

a

F

d

ľ

ing for a Person, I say, in such a Place, and for so small a Crime as this appears, in the Opinion of us freeborn Englishmen; to be condemned to the hard griping Fate of being starved to Death; is a very unpleafant Theme for a Man of Appetite to think on. And for an higher Illustration of this Melancholy Supposition, we will for a Moment, beg leave of our generous Readers to translate this Tragic-Scene, from Puppet-Island to England; and suppose that the Famous Mr. H-d-l, whose happy Volubility of Appetite, they fay in one Year, ruin'd an honest worthy Housekeeper, by articling unadvifedly with his Worship, to supply his curious and voracious Stomach; in all its Crayings, for that Space of Time, for the poor Allowance of fix hundred Pounds, only; when, by woeful Experience, he found (but alas! too late!) that three Times that Money, would not have over paid him.

But I fay, suppose this worthy Gentleman should any wise, undesignedly, in his Way, pronounce from his Fingers Ends (for those are his best Instruments of Speech,) the Accents of some bold forbidden Truths, swoln high in Sound only (without expressive Words) and lusciously pour'd forth from the sweet Organs Throat, ravishing to the Ear, but construed to Offence; and afterwards, for this harmonious Fault, the offended Powers should issue forth

forth the aforefaid horrid Sentence against him! What humane Christian, but must feel a Sympathy of inward Gripings, at the plaintive Croakings and Belchings of his poor, restless, and most wretched Stomach and Bowels; which in Magnitude are not much inferior to those of a Coach-Horse? Farewel then to Burgundy! Arrack! Champaign! and Claret! Farewel! dear Ottolans and Turkey-poults! with all the mighty Train of numerous Dainties! Farewel to all the guttling! guzzling Sweets! (which at the nearest Computation, might maintain a moderate Country Parish) Oh! Farewel! Farewel!—Never to return again.

Upon my Word and Hononr, my gentle Readers, the Penning of this good Scene hath to potently wrought upon my own tender Spirits, that I cannot but think it would fliew itself to great Advantage, and might perhaps affect the Audience, (either upwards or downwards) were it but properly introduced in the Height of a good Tragedy; for it is, indeed, too moving to be carry'd on, in this entertaining History.

The state of the s

upecled of the vitations Crane of ferib

CHAP. XIII.

A further Account of their ill-Treatment of Poets, and a particular Instance of which I was myself a Witness.

HE Art of Poetry is now very near extinct amongst the Puppets; and it feems indeed greatly owing to this Cause; the Natives of this Island generally treat Poets with much less Humanity, than a Barbary Infidel does a Christian Slave. So that to be there fuspected of being a Poet, is equal, if not worse than to be thought a common Robber. And yet, what is very strange, and scarcely to be credited, People of the most refined Taste amongst them, affect prodigiously to be delighted with Reading of Poetry; as well as to understand it, too: Many of them having more of that Sort of Writing in their Closets. than of Religion. And yet, at the same Time, are so unaccountably unmerciful towards the ingenious Authors of it.

The Character of a Poet, in Puppet-Island, I can compare to nothing nearer than that of a mad-Dog in England; where every Body endeavours either to get out of his Way, or to throw something at him. For, to be there

fuf-

ful

Po

be

21

by

wan

ab

po

ir

W

fe

fuspected of the villainous Crime of scribbling Poetry, is much like that, some Years ago, of being thought a Witch in England. And they are generally suspected too, of that Malady, by the same Symptoms as Witches usually were: viz. a simple Appearance of Poverty, and a Murmuring to themselves, as they go about their Business. And which, we do suppose, is no more than a kind of pleasant and inward Conversation with their own Thoughts; which, to others, who never think at all, may feem somewhat unaccountable.

But you cannot there pop your Head into any House whatever, and they should suspect you to be guilty of Poetry, but you are fure to be infulted for it. And though, out of an elevated Respect for your Genius, they may erect a Monument to your Memory an Hundred and fifty Years after your Death; yet, while you are alive, they make but a very little Account This, to a generous Englishman, of vou. may doubtless seem very strange Doctrine; but I can honestly assure my Readers, that they have at this very Day, in a great many of their Churches in Puppet-Island, many elegant Monuments which were erected by Charity to the Memory of certain favourite Poets, whose Lives they immortalized, by the Generosity of flarving them to Death .- Oh! Milton! Ot-

C

P

b

h

th

tl

fo

W

V

fi

W

ii

r

a

tl

fe

fe

P

il

P

b

i

way! Butler! Dennis! &c. &c. &c. How happy was it for you, that you were all born, and dy'd in England!

Just as the Puppets esteem Poets, so they do the Players too; for as it is generally allow'd (even by them) that these ingenious, useful, entertaining People, either do, or should, (if they are properly qualified for their Business) understand Nature, Passions, Men and Manners, better than almost any other Set of People (Poets and Painters excepted) in the whole Island, so they deal by them accordingly: For they are there term'd in Law Vagours; which Word, a little like the French, fignifies an idle, loofe, diforderly Person; and the same as a common Beggar. And are, therefore, treated but one Degree better than a Poet; and that Advantage over the Poet, the Player exacts by his generally appearing fomething better rigg'd than the Poet: Because, as the Business of a Player unavoidably obliges him now and then (if possible) to put on something like a clean Shirt, he frequently outshines the Poet in Apparel all to nothing. Yet, notwithstanding this Advantage, the Player has no such a fine Time of it neither; nothing being more common in that Island, than to fee and hear an ignorant Coxcomb, who is an absolute Stranger to the Alphabet, call one of thefe useful and ingenious People

People (as we shall here suppose them) Vagour, by way of Insult and Contempt. Which Behaviour, I have, indeed, often thought, deserv'd the severest Chastisement.

Perhaps it may be thought a little warping from that regular Method, which we propofed. when first we undertook to regulate and adjust the Notes and Journal of our Author; to inform our Readers, here, of an odd Adventure which befel him after he had been about eight Months upon the Island. But, as we shall have frequent Occasion to mention the Person who with all Respect and Deference we are now going to introduce to our Reader; as it will corroborate and greatly strengthen what we have already advanced; we think it much more methodical to prefent him in this Place, than to with-hold him any longer; because, as we have fo lately and unavoidably mention'd his Profession, it will seem more natural, and better Manners in us to shew him here, than to let him wait till we have an absolute Necessity for his Presence; and then, to be obliged to hig him in by the Head and Shoulders, as many of our ill-bred modern Authors do some of their most polite Characters. Befides, as this worthy and useful Person is a very compleat Gentleman. both by his Education and Profession; we think it our Duty towards each Party, to present Vol. III. K him

I

1

E

tl

a

at

th

th

as at

L

th

no

hi

ab

him here to our Readers with fome little Ceremony.

In the first Place, we beg Leave to fay that this noble Gentleman is by Trade and Country an eminent Poet in the Island of Puppets, and that he is a Person of Taste and Understanding, the Sequel of our History, we trust will shew. But if any of our haughty Readers should be difgusted that we have given him the Appellation of a Gentleman; we would gladly be inform'd what other Title he may more properly be diftinguish'd by, without giving Offence? Besides, as there is not a Journeyman-Taylor, nor a Foot-Soldier in Great-Britain, but what claims that Title by his Profession; I know no Reason why we should refuse it to an ingenious Poet, though he be a Foreigner. As we have already fhewn how Poets are generally effeem'd in this ungrateful Island (as we must here think it) we shall now proceed to inform you, how our Author, there, first became acquainted with this learned Gentleman: And which in his own Words, are as follows:

Being one Day in a Public House, much like that of an English Alehouse (for I frequently went about in Disguise to learn as much of the Nature and Manners of the People, as I possibly could) I was suddenly surprized

-

at

y

d

v.

e

1-

1-

ly

1:

r,

at

10

us

re

d

re

u,

ed

in

ch

e-

as

0-

r-

prized by the People's gathering together in small Groups, and crouding into the several Corners of the Room; and all, whispering to one another, directed their Eyes with great Contempt, towards a grave looking Gentleman; who, at his first entring the House, according to the Fashion of that Country, saluted all the People in the Room with his Hat, and then fat down in a vacant Seat, pretty near the Fire; for the Weather was indeed at that Time coolish. By all the People's so earnest Endeavour to avoid his Company, as well as by their evil Looks towards him, and his mean Apparel, I at first imagined him to have been one of those hated People, who, in England, are best known by the Name of Bailisf's Followers; or he might have been an Informer, or any other fuch Person; nay, he might have been a Thief for aught that I knew; and therefore, I did as the rest of the People did; that is to fay, I got as far out of his Company as I possibly could. And by so doing, being at this Time pretty well acquainted with their Language, I foon understood the Reason of this very strange Proceeding, as I thought it.

This Gentleman, for fo I shall yet call him, notwithstanding his Countrymen's Contempt of him, was a tall, thin, well-favour'd Man; of about forty Years of Age; had a fine solid and

K 2

composed

Sail.

composed Countenance, and an Eye that seem'd as quick and piercing as a Dart: And though it was plain that he both saw and knew their Motions and their Thoughts; yet he seem'd quite unmoved at them: And shew'd in his Countenance, a kind of pleasant, or as it were a much more sublime Contempt for them, than they were capable of expressing for him.

His Apparel was extremely mean from Head to Foot, but perfectly clean from any kind of Filth whatever. His Looks expressed a most conspicuous Mixture of Sweetness, Grandeur, and Penetration; which, when I came to understand what he was, made me to reflect very feverely upon myself, for giving into the general ill-natured and vile Behaviour of those, who fhewed fuch a fcandalous Contempt of his Person and Profession. But he, as I observ'd before, taking no Account of their Proceeding, call'd for fomething to drink; and then having taken up an Instrument of Paper, not much in Nature unlike to some of our News-Papers; after reading some few Minutes therein, he, feemingly, broke out aloud, extempore, in the following Lines .- (that is to fay, when tranflated into English) and which he express'd with the strongest Energy imaginable.

radoment, and better to my Liking, than I

be Adventures of Book VIII

t

e

d

f

d

g

e

d

How Glory deck'd the Puppet-Shore!

How Glory deck'd the Puppet-Shore!

How Honour! Courage! Conquest! Trade!

All united, though—now, they fade!

Our Ministers were honest! wise!

Nor would they brook Indignities;

The least Dishonour to our Crown

Would force their heavy Vengeance down.

All Nations sought our YAWHOOP's Love,

And fear'd his Thunder, as from Jove.

The Scale of Power then he held,

And where he sought, his Arms compell'd!

Before his Sword whole Kingdows sted;

But now his Laurels all—alas! are dead!

No fooner had the Poet ended the above Lines, than all the People in the Room express'd a most hideous and confused Noise. Nor was it possible for me to discover whether it was Applause or Disapplause, it was composed of fo many seeming Contradictions. Some figh'd, fome howl'd, fome groan'd, fome laugh'd, and others clap'd their Hands. So that I could form but a very indifferent Construction how this Speech (if I may fo call it) was generally approved. For my Part, all that I knew of the Matter, was, that I thought he expressed them with a great deal of Grace and Judgment; and better to my Liking, than I K 3 had. had ever remembered any of our Players act on the English-Stage. For methought his very Eyes, and the Muscles of his Face seem'd to express an equal Meaning with his Words. But however, he did not stay to court any of their Praises; for having now paid his Reckoning, he departed the Room with as good a Grace, as he entered it. And so at present we shall take our Leave of him, of our Reader and this Chapter together, and invite the former two of these to meet us again, as Occasion shall best offer.

CHAP. XIV.

Containing a further Account of the Taste and Humour of the Puppet-Ladies, and of a very sudden and a melancholy Accident to one of my generons Subscribers, &c.

THE Taste and Genius of the Puppets, are not confined to any particular Cast of Pleasures, or Public-Entertainment; for a Proof of which, I need only to remember, that, although they were informed (and did also verily believe) that I was a Foreign PRINCE of a most Illustrious-Birth; yet, my Generous Sub-

I.

a

is

d

s.

of

1-

a

re

d

er

R

ft

a

-

S

Subscribers had no sooner settled my Pension, but they formed to themselves great Prospects of Pleasure and Diversions from my wonderful Performances. And accordingly, they demanded of me, one Day, with great Affurances of their Hopes being fully fatisfied, whether I could not dance, or fiddle, or fing, ortumble, or play them some pleasant Antic-Tricks to divert them? But I not chufing to understand them, and they at that Time finding themselves at a very great Loss to understand my Language; they immediately appointed a Person on purpose, to take all the expeditious Care and Pains he could, to teach me their's. Which good and generous Deed I no fooner came to underfland, but that I feemingly became as eager to learn it, as they were to instruct me: Not in the least doubting but that I should easily find my Account in it; nor was it indeed long, before I found out that it was the common Foible, of the great People in particular, to encourage to the highest Degree all Foreigners of whatsoever Clime or Complexion, more than those of their own Country. And I must confess. though I know not for what Reason, they were ever more than ordinarily affiduous in instructing and ferving all Sorts of Strangers, than they were in fo doing to their Fellow-Natives. K 4

For it is a Maxim among those good-natured People, that their own Countrymen are all of them naturally Clowns and Fools; but, that those gross Epithets are, in no wise, due to the more deserving Right of their beloved Foreigners, whom they generally place in Power and Office next unto themselves : So that, their Tables can't be ferued; their Cloaths fashion'd, their Houses furnished, nor their Education compleated, without they are all directed, managed, and finished by the infailiable Hand and Judgment of fome Foreign Genius. Any uleful Art, or Mystery, which is study'd and discovered by a Puppet-Genius, at never fo much Expence, of either Coft, Labour, or Time, must be worthless, dull and impotent (in the Opinion of the Polite) but the very same Thing, though it should be made more deficient, is far more valuable, if wrought by an Alien-Hand. But the Stouters, or Common-People of the Island, are in this Respect quite to the Contrary: Forasmuch as the Better-most-People are fond of Strangers, the Generality of the Inferior Class, bear them the utmost Dislike. And, I also found, that I was not carefs'd by my Admirers, either for the fake of my Person, my Birth, my Merit, or my Country; nor did it proceed from their Generofity, better Understanding, or good Breeding; but from pure Pride, Affectatod bed bas tion. he reft of them been

I.

d

of

at

O

7-

2

ir

1,

1,

,

d.

t

r

.

,

f

1

tion, and Folly. For, I afterwards found, that the more Airs I gave myfelf, the more I was liked; and the more ignorant I feem'd of all useful Knowledge, the more they admired my gented Sense and Taste.

I remember, that while I was once attending on one of my worthy Benefactreffes, and about eight or ten Visitants of the same Sex; she, among other Enquiries concerning the Customs of my own Country, asked me how the great Ladies in England generally spent their Time? I being willing to give the best Character of them that I possibly could, reply'd-In the Summer-Season, Madam, they, many of them, bufy themselves in gathering of Flowers, Herbs, &c. and afterwards distilling of them into useful Cordials, and Waters; or making them into Wines, and Medicines for the Benefit of their poor Neighbours, and their own Family Service--- I was going to fay a great deal more to their Advantage, but she no sooner heard the Word distilling, than she gave a great Squall, as though both her Legs had been that very Moment chopt off, and at the same Instant, fell backwards into her great Chair, as dead as a Herring. Several of the other Ladies, at the same Moment, changed Colour, and were extreamly fick: And had not the rest of them been busily

employ'd, in endeavouring the Recovery of the first, which very likely put the great Cause of this Disorder for the present out of their Heads; without much doubt, they had all of them been in the same Condition. At this sudden Disaster, I was myself half frighted out of my Wits, nor could I in the least conceive what could have wrought this wonderful-Effect. But while I stood in this Astonishment, and not knowing how to act, the Riddle was pretty tolerably unfolded to me, by one of the good Ladies absolutely forbidding me on any Account hereaster, to speak of any of the English Ladies Employment, in any other Sense, than that of the most refined Pleasures

Tho' I must own, to do to the Clappers, or Puppit-belles strict Justice, there are many of them extremely worthy; but then indeed, they are hated and despised for it, by the Generality of their own Sex; as much as they are admired by the other. Envy is a reigning, natural and ungovernable Passion amongst the sine Ladies of that Island: For a Proof of which, I must ascertain that many of them will run instantly mad, and will commit the most outrageous and unwarrantable Actions imaginable, even at seeing another Woman more beautiful, or better drest than herself. And they are many of them so very thoughtless,

of

le:

ir

of

is

it

e

d

y

d

3

n

r

and so little sensible of their own Happiness; that, although they may already enjoy all that a reasonable Person could wish, or defire, on this side Immortality; yet are they frequently and easily enticed away from their Husbands and Children, by the empty Promise of some insignificant Trisle, which the dissembling Betrayer is pleased to invent. And what is still perhaps more strange to an English Comprehension, is, that although the Art of Dissimulation, is there, the chiefest Study and the Delight of the Fair-sex, in general; yet, are they themselves (that is to say some of them) the easiest trapan'd, by the same Practice, of any Creatures living.

Flattery is the only Bait to angle for them for if you were to heap the most preposterous Encomiums upon them, that could possibly be invented, you connot express more in their behalf, than they themselves are willing to believe, so that in short, if the Men will but take the least Pains with them imaginable, they are generally willing to meet their own Ruin half way: And at the same Time, that they are thus sinking into their own Destruction, they will vehemently express the utmost Detestation and Abhorrence of all such Proceedings that can be imagined; nay, and to all outward Appearance, will utterly loath and

contemn, to the highest Degree, the ungodly Object of all such horrid Guiltiness.

But now it is very reasonable to suppose, that my Readers, and especially if they should be of the Feminine Gender (though they cannot in the least be suspected to have any Affinity here with these Puppet Ladies, yet I doubt not but that they) would gladly confent that I should change my Subject. Therefore, to convince them that I am an impartial Author, I will now flew them that the Male Sex in this same Island, is far more culpable than the Ladies can possibly be. A lively Specimen of which I shall here present them in the next Chapter. And which was (hereafter given to me, by the very Poet I have just now mentioned, and honestly translated by myself.)

CHAP. XV.

The inward Portrait of Mr. Mac-o-brass, delineated by bimself, in a remarkable Appology for his obdurate Life; with the Grounds of his continual Views, and his particular Opinion of the most material Points, explain'd, in the Addition of his Greed, aunex'd to it.

As the Drawing any particular Man's Character with Justness and Equity, both towards the Original thereof, and the Public, is generally look'd upon as a very difficult Task, we shall here present you with a new Attempt of that Kind. We say new, because it is done in a new Way; especially considering that the Author is herein his own Painter. Who, being not satisfy'd with barely giving you his outside Lines, lightly touch'd up, he freely presents you with the Image of his very Soul; and the better to fill up the Piece, he has, like a good Judge, added a few little wanton Figures, to keep out his own Portrait the suller and stronger to the Eye:

Captain Greenland, who was perfonally acquainted with this excellent Draughtsman, affures us that his Colouring is so true, that he dares

dares be fworn there is not a false Stroke in the whole Picture. If this Way of Painting should happen to please the Generality of our Readers; as it is in an entire new Taste, and Method; and also, foreign too; we doubt not but that we shall be soon entertain'd with the Publication of many Performances in close Imitation thereof. Which, as it will be a great Encouragement of Truth and Plain-dealing, we heartily wish it Success. This Piece was exhibited in Puppet-Island under the following Title, which we apprehend was not, to that Country, very hieroglyphical.

A short, true, and honest Apology for the Life of Mr. Mac-o-brass, a celebrated Puppet Genius.

Rich and Poor, Big and Little, High-Church and Low-Church, All-Church and No-Church, and of all other Sorts and Denominations whatfoever.

It hath been a Point that hath taken up much Time and Dispute in all Parts of the World: Whether the first and most prevalent Principle in Nature, be not SELF-INTEREST? Some maintain it affirmatively; and others in the Negative. For my Part, I shall not augment

t

e

ment the Debate by taking either Side; but shall leave the World to judge of my Opinion by the Means I have hitherto pursued. And if I have unwittingly committed any Error in the Course of my Conduct, I hope I have sufficiently atoned for the Fault, in this my prefent Performance.

As it is certainly Observation and Application, that tempers, moulds and mellows the Understanding and Capacity of all Men; fo I hope, nobody can deny but that mine has been as keen and ready as any body's whatever. Nay, fo keen, that I had once like to have been cut off by them. But that's past, and damn all Gallows's I fay. But, notwithstanding all the Pains I have taken to gain my Ends, I find it very difficult to acquire the Public-Reputation of a Great Man: till I have accomplish'd some particular and famous Work; which I am thoroughly perfuaded this very APOLOGY will compleat: And I think it a very happy and lucky Thought; little less than Inspiration, I mean, when this fine Crotchet first took Place in my capacious and fertile Brain. I have already the Character of a very excellent Genius; for which I am more oblig'd to the Stupidity of the World, than to Mother Nature. And to speak Truth, I am infinitely more indebted to Madam Fortune than I am to Nature gam

Nature and all the World together; as will perhaps more fully, appear hereafter. I have already dipped my Pen in Poetry, Plots and Cafes; and indeed, I think my Case very hard, that any Part of the Public should have more Sense and Judgment than myself: There I think Fortune and Nature both to blame. But

to proceed:

Seeing in the Public Papers a continual Chain of Apologies for the Lives of several eminent Persons (who never were eminent till their Apologies made them fo) I began to reflect within myself, that mine as much required an Apalogy to be made for it (if that can any wife mend it) as perhaps any unhang'd Rafcal's in Puppet-Island. But what Apology can be made for my Actions, which are already committed (damnably wicked too) that may in any Degree alleviate the Guilt ? Lies, in the Eye of the World, will only darken their Die: And those I have sufficiently try'd already; therefore I shall now break through my former Plan of Practice, and speak a Language I never meant to know; I mean Words of Truth, Heaven fend them a free Utterance! that Things fo ftrangely new to me, may not endanger me with Suffocation, in their monftrous Bringings forth: Relative am all bases on he A so want

But however, I need not (I suppose) to apologize for my indigent Birth and Education: As it is not his own Workings, no Man alive can be accountable for fuch Deficiency. But for my Actions fince I fet up for myfelf, as they I must own, have been pretty hellish; they do indeed merit fome little Apology. And pray what Apology can I make for my bad Actions? but that they proceeded from my bad Views ; my bad Views were consequently the natural Effect of my bad Principles; and my Principles, of my wicked Nature : So that, by tracing the Matter regularly, I find myfelf fully acquitted of all Manner of Blame that can possibly be charged upon me. And that Nature ONLY, is in Fault for all my past Offences. For it is evident, that no Man can act contrary to his Nature.—So far, all's right !-

8

e

1

F.

d

e

F

t

9

e.

t

It is true I have committed Murder (and fome other pretty hellish Actions) But what then? Was this my Fault? No! 'Twas the Effect of Envy, Malice and Passion; which was the natural and faulty Composition of my damn'd Temper: But then I took my Trial for't, and if any body will give themselves the Trouble to read it, and afterwards make a proper and careful Enquiry into the Truth of what I here assert, they will find that every Soul who appear'd in my Behalf, on that

tremendous

tremendous Day, are, either already dead; or otherwise fallen into an absolute Decay 1. This Truth is fo remarkable, and worthy Observation, that, being conscious of my Legal Deferts, I am now perfuaded, by this general and fevere Visit of Providence, that the black Sin of that fatal Act, was then, by their good Interposition between me and Lady Justice, transferred from my Account to their own; because, I have well noticed, that they are all of them, fince that Time, funk into a dreadful Ruin or the Grave. But indeed, most of them into the latter. While I still live and flourish in spite of the Devil and all that belong to him. My Bosom too is calm; which clearly shews to me, that that great Score is paid, unless Providence should hereafter, remember to cram it into a latter Account; and visit me with the black Bill when I little expect it .- Ha! I don't like that Thought! It favours too much of Horror! Damn all latter Accounts! I fay .-But hold! why should I damn them? Upon a Recollection, I have made myself by latter Accounts. It was a latter Account that faved me from Hanging; it was a latter Account that deceived all those who were ever yet concerned

with me; and it was a latter Account that

[‡] This true Observation of Mr. Mac-c-brass's, is a great Instance of the Justice of Divine Providence.

T.

or

is ı-

-

d

-

-

,

,

r

0

e

V

C

t

t

brought me where I now am; and where I can either flatter, or bully my Master (as will best answer my End) till I have made him the same kind of Biggotted-Ass, as I did of the Person who saved me from the Gallows. And lastly, by a latter Account, in the same Manner, I can deal with the Town too. Therefore, I recall my hasty Curse, and constitute in its Place, a Blessing: Which, if this Blessing hold good, till the last Part of my latest latter Account is past; all the rest of the World may be damn'd! for all I care. For,

As privately, or publickly, Self-interest is certainly the first grand and general View of the whole World; when I reslect upon it, the more I consider my own Actions, the more I admire them. For, in my Survey or Scrutiny of other Men's Doings, I find them all alike; that is, all tending to one only Point.

Go to the Court, and you shall there see Begging, Flattery, Lying, Pride, Backbiting, Insolence, and Sycophancy; in the Army, Cheating, Vanity, Ignorance, Cowardice, and Tyranny; in the Navy, Arrogance, Inhumanity, Ostentation and Oppression; in the Church, they ride you, and feed you like Balaam's Ass, bolting the best Flour for their own Use, and leaving you to batten upon Chass and Thisses; that is to say, they glean you—According to the

DIGING GREENLAND.

the Gospel. The Lawyer, he strips you naked; and, by cloathing you with a Suit of Law, leaves you, before he was done with you destitute of any other Suit to wear. The Minister, taxes and plunders the Public, to supply himself, his Relations, and Friends, with Wealth, Luxury and Dominion: And the busy envious Patriot bellows, scribbles, and torments himself and the Public, with his Noisy-cant; in Order to get at the Minister's Place; and then, plays over all the very same Tricks that the other had done before him.

So that, Princes, Players, Prizefighters and Ploughmen; Bishops, Bailiffs, Bawds, Bullies, Butchers and Blockheads; Ladies, Lubbers, Lackies, Lovers, Loobies and Lawyers; Whores, Wits, Witches, Wittols and Watermen; Fops, Fools, Friars, Fishers, Fidlers and Fanaticks, have all the fame grand View of Self-interest before them; and which is the very Indentical Needle, that points to all their Poles: And that same Needle that makes its North in the Service of all those People abovementioned, hath, also, pointed out my Pole, by the repeated Practice of all those fine and necessary Qualifications I have just enumerated. Shall any Man, then, pretend to arraign my Conduct? Let him look into the World, as I have done, then will he quickly find, that o-

ther:

(

t

Ch. 15. Captain GREENLAND. 213 ther Men's Views and Actions, are a sufficient Apology for mine.

0

.

3

1

,

15

1-

h

1,

}-

d

s, s, rrs

ir ts e, dd.

1.

Here follows my CREED.

I Verily believe, that it is all Men's Duty, as well as their Defires, to do their uttermost for their own private Interest: That all Mankind, are in nature Villains. That the Reason why some of them do not so conspicuously shew their Roguish Talents, as some others do; is, because they are either too pusillanimous, too ignorant, or too crafty. That all Religion's a Trick, Conscience, a Folly, Honesty, a Cheat, Morality, a Puff, the Devil, an Ass, and Hell, but a Bugbear. So be it.

The End of the Eighth Book.

THE

Ch 15 Ciffin Greenian and Linear and China China

well explicit Division of their eteron of continuous points of the continuous points of the continuous files one Real and their continuous continuous continuous continuous continuous continuous continuous continuous continuous files and their continuous continuous

Flick and the second of the

The End of the Lightly Balt.

certains the these winds are worth tensiving and that deferred the Name of Historical, we had that Chapter) venture to be given the control of the charter o



THE

ADVENTURES

OF

Capt. GREENLAND.

BOOK IX.

CHAP. I.

Which may ferve for a PREFACE to this BOOK.

HAVING already noted most of the chief Matter we could gather concerning this Island, which are worth remarking; and that deserves the Name of Historical; we shall (after this short Chapter) venture to begin the present Book with the Relation of two

do also hope, cannot be match'd by the Proceedings of any real Characters now living in Great Britain: Notwithstanding, it must be confest, that there are some Persons to be pickt out, in every Kingdom, we believe, that, were their true Characters to be faithfully delineated we might therein easily trace some few Features, which would perhaps too! too much resemble the most conspicuous Marks of the few Persons next hereafter shewn.

And what we should most gladly wish for, in the Exhibition of these particular Pieces, is, that if any of our good Readers should happen to see the least ungrateful Likeness, either between themselves, or their Neighbours, when compared with the desormed Figures of this well painted Picture; that they will make that good Advantage thereof, as they generally aim at, when they imagine they see the direct contrary in their own admired Glasses.

These Paintings being, in fact, exposed to Public View, with no other Design than to render them equally useful and more beneficial, to their wise Beholders, than any Chrystal-Mirrour ever yet was, to the greatest Fop, or daintiest Beauty that ever selt a single Rapture at the dear resected Likeness of their own precious Image.

Therefore,

d

-

n

e t

e

6

h

e

n

n

n

t

n

•

O

Therefore, our present Petition is, that when any Mr. or Madam Polecat, (among our Readers) Ihall happen to imagine that their own Characters are here fruck at; they may immediately conclude, that it must evidently be their own Consciences, only, that can inform them of fuch a Thought. And if, by fuch a Review, any difagreeable Strokes feem to offend them, therein; and that they should think them not fimilar to their own Defervings; then we do confidently affirm that they are not impartial Judges of good Painting. And, again, if they should chance to find any vicious Likeness herein, when justly compared with their own Thoughts, Manners, or Behaviour; then, let them throw away the unwholesome Part of their own Practice, and the Picture is no longer theirs. And yet, it shall still remain to be the exact Portrait of every one who continues to be like the Picture.

Now, the fame Documents which we thus particularly recommend in this Place; we, in like Manner, would wish our judicious and candid Readers to bear with them, all through the rest of this entertaining and inftructive Work. It not being either our Bufiness, or Intention, to point out particular Persons, but to paint particular Characters; Vol. III. there-

therefore, if any Author should happen to draw an Infamous or Vicious-Character; the World hath much more Cause to be angry with any Man for being like that Character; than be has to be offended with the ingenious Author for inventing a Character that happens to be too much like himself. So that, if any Person should take the least Umbrage at any Part of this we shall hereby conclude, that he has only rubbed his own Nose in a very unfavoury Proverb: And that the more he stirs in it, the more he'll Provoke the ftench.

This leads us naturally to imagine, that no English Man will dare to think himself the least in Likeness to our last ingenious Friend Mr. Mac-o-brass; that no Clown in England will compare himself to either of our honest Dolts; that no Papist - Priest can fee himself in Father Benedict; or, that there is, or ever was, one Justice Lumber, in the whole City of Worcester. Nor will it be the least easier Matter to persuade any other Perfon, to challenge his own Representation in the Character of Sir Christopher Morgan; and as for Captain Flame, there never was any fuch Man in all Europe! Not even in the late Wars. And the same Observation, we may fup-

Ch. 2. Captain GREENLAND.

w

rld

ny

123

for

too

ıld

his

he n-

he he

nat

elf ous

in

of

an

erc

the

er-

in

m;

any

ate

ay

up-

fuppofe, will also hold good, on many other Characters yet to come.

So that, by all we can gather, by this fair and natural Scrutiny, there is no more Danger of finding any one Perfon who will own their least Similitude with any bad Character in this Work; than there is of finding twenty thou-fand for every one that is good.

chap. II.

A great National-Bully not Master of his own House: Being an Instance of the Despotic Power of a Puppet-Wise. And translated here, with an Intent to gladden the Hearts of all English Husbands by the Comparison of this Chapter with their own happy State.

The Highest to the Lowest, greatly pique themselves upon their magnanimous Spirits; but that my Readers may be lest to a free and open Judgment in this Respect, I shall here present them, that is to say, one after another, with two saithful Relations as they really happened during myAbode in that Island. The One was an actual Matter of Fact in the Family of a certain great Politic and Patriot-Yawbe; and L 2

loud

the other, in that of a reputable Make-Knack, or Tradesman. Though, I am apt to believe, that the Reader will find the Latter to be the greatest Politician of the two: As well as a Person of the most real Courage and Conduct, But as an eminent Author says,

The Wife and Valiant in all Ages have been Henpeck'd.—Spectator.

And it is a little unlikely, that a Man should be able to put the whole Nation to rights, when, at the same Time, he is not able to govern his own Family. Yet is there nothing here more frequent, than to see and hear Men prescribe Rules and Maxims in Public; which they could never themselves observe in the Management of their own private Affairs. But sure nothing makes a Man cut a more contemptible Figure, if we examine him rightly, than to be pelting and quarrelling at the Government; and his Friends; and his Neighbours; about their several Proceedings; when, at the same Time, he is the most regardless Wretch of his own Reputation and Family.

The Person whom the following Story treats of, was certainly a most thundering Patriot for his Country; but, as some think, without the least Grain of Honesty; a public and busy Author, pretending and prescribing abundance of

pood

The Adventures of

Book IX.

Ch. 2.

k,

e,

ne

a

ì.

n

d

5,

)-

g

n

h

-

it

-

C

d

,

n

3

r

f

1

221

good and beneficial Things, which he neither wish'd nor intended should serve any body living but bimfelf. And while he maintained this Clamour against the Ministry, he at the fame Time farm'd out his Kitchen and his Reputation together to his Wife. Who, 'twas faid, in every Respect, was as careless of her Character, as the was sparing of her Purse! So that now, she feem'd as it were to have brought all Things upon a Footing: Tradefmen grew indifferent of her Custom; Servants despised her Service; and the whole Town joined in one common Cry to condemn her general Behaviour. The Hufband himfelf was often pity'd for her Sake: Till Time himself pulled off the Masque; and rendered him (publickly Great as he was) in every Respect, a Wretch as mean and worthless as herself! And indeed, in no wife worthy of the least better Wife.

This remarkable Gentleman (who, for the Affinity which his Puppet-Name bears with his Public-Character, I shall here call Mr. Polecat,) was a Person of a very large Estate in this Island: Great Part of which, the Public are too well acquainted in what Manner it was gain'd. And as he made a very great Noise, both in the Senate with his Tongue; and in the Public Papers with his Pen; for he was a very L 3 loud

Captain GREENLAND:

loud and learned Statesman; so did he, also, make a great outside Shew with his half-stary'd Servants and Equipage. But, to give the Devil his Due, as the Saying is, had they been all quite starved, Mr. Polecat himself had therein, been no wife blameable: Because he allow'd a Sufficiency to Mrs. Polecat, his fweet and prudent Wife, for the good Maintenance of them all. That is to fay, without Excess. But Madam Polecat was almost as knowing and potitical in her Sphere; as her Dear Lord and Husband was in bis. For we are to remember. that all fhe could fave out of the Household Allowance, was consequently so much clear Gains to herfelf. And good Oeconomy is certainly commendable: Therefore the oftner the Servants went away, the better for her: Because, as the managed Things, it might be fome Time before the got others to supply their By which Means, there was both Eatables and Wages faved. And it was also faid, that she always took a special and prudent Care, never to dress too much Victuals, and indeed for very good Reasons; because otherwife, Servants might be extravagant; and overfeeding them might make them faucy.

Well, as the Good Man himfelf had enough, to do to keep the Nation in Order, and the Miniftry within Bounds, it was not to be fupposed

0,

'd

e-

all

n,

a

1-

m

ıt

)-

đ

,

d

r

.

· lo

posed that he could mind every Thing, both at Home and Abroad too: By which Deficiency, (although indeed it was a little cruel) he became a Jest among some of his witty Friends and Fellew-Patriots. And as they often met together to consult Measures for the Nation's Good, or their own Interest, which is the same Thing; they frequently rally'd our Hero, Mr. Polecat, for giving up the Domestic Sovereignty to his Wife.

And one Day, above all the rest, Mr. Polecat dining with feveral of those keen Gentlemen, at one of their Houses; he likewise proposed to entertain them all, to the Number of near twenty Persons, the next Day at his own House in Return. And therefore, he made them a personal Invitation, accordingly: But they all of them knowing that Madam Polecat was Lady of the Ascendant, in order to enrich their Entertainment when they came there, the higher; all answered him with one Voice, that they absolutely would not dine with him, unless they might each of them have Leave to chuse a favourite Dish of their own Naming, in the Composition of this Dinner: Which he asfenting to, one chose a certain Sort of Pie, another a peculiar Pudding; a third, a Soop; a fourth a Fift; another a particular made Dift; and others certain Joints of Meat; and so they q: --- L4 went

fel

Wa

Fa

ab

th

O

n

2.

W

0

3

C

ł

went round: Those Things Mr. Polecat immediately recorded in Black and White, and faithfully promised they should have them the next Day; which as I have said, was their appointed Time to wait on him.

This Odd Thought, they all very likely gave into, on purpose to put Madam Polecat a little out of her common Road; and perhaps to make a little Diversion between this honourable and worthy Pair: As well as to try how far her Complaisance and Generosity would suffer her to comply with her Hustand's and Friends Request, and which, to be fure, must be a very potent Trial to a Lady of her superfine Spirit, and most engaging Taste. But the wise Mr. Polecat, knowing her Humour to a Hair, and being a thorough Politician, went a very cunning Way to work, both to fulfil his Promife, and to accomplish his Ends. And therefore, as it was possible that his dear and obedient Wife, would little regard this particular Request of his; as not being in her Marriage-Articles: He thought that his Servants would not dare to disobey him; though she might chance to be a little refractory herfelf. So that he took no more Notice of it to her, than by telling her the next Morning, that he had the Promise of so many Friends to dine with him that Day; and that, for certain Reafons, he would him-DOYLOUDE. felf felf instruct the Cook about the Dinner. And which, accordingly he did; for as soon as he was come down Stairs, he drew up a Bill of Fare, with all the particular Dishes, as desired above by his Friends, properly intermixt, and then sent for his Cook to come and receive his Orders. To whom he gave a strict Charge not to omit the least Part of it. But, alackaday! what is the insignificant Power of the wisest! boldest Husband on Earth, when it is opposed by the Omnipotence of so prudent, and so valuable a Wife? The Cook had not received these positive Commands from his Master half an Hour, before his tremendous Mistress fent him fresh Orders.

But I should here inform my Readers in Time, that Madam's Housekeeper and Confident, who bore her daily Commands to the Cook, was as proper an Agent for her Purpose, as the Devil himself could have furnished her with. She had lived with this good Lady Polecat a great many Years; and by giving into all her honourable Proceedings, she was now become as dear to her, as Pride, Death and Blasphemy is to old Lucifer. Therefore this worthy Damsel, we shall for the future, distinguish by the proper Name of Mrs. or, if you please.

Now, the Cook, as I have faid, had not long
L 5 received

T

md

to t

01.9

miles

H.H.

di

ug.

. 13

i

Captair GREENLAND: 227

received his Master's Commands, before Mrs. Pandora presented him with others from her dutiful and obliging Lady, and which she delivered as follows.—

Here! Cook! faid the (in a mighty pretty Kind of an infolent and imperious, haughty Manner; which, though it was a little in her own natural Way; yet, the had greatly improved it from her Lady) you must go to Market, said she, this Minute, and provide the Contents of this Bill of Fare for Dinner.

Madam, reply'd the Cook (very fubmiffively, for fhe had greatly improved all the Servant's Manners towards herself in particular) My Master fent for me, just now, and has given me a Bill of Fare already; with firich Orders not to omit the least Part of it, on any Account. Your Mafter! reply'd Mrs. Pandora (with fome Heat and Surprize) Pray, what has your Master to do with the Business of the Kitchen! Let him mind his public Affairs; and not trouble his Head with Cooking. 'Twill better become his Talents and his Place; and you, do as I order you. My Lady is the Perfon you are to obey; and nobody else. With all my Heart, Madam, faid the Cook; you must then take the Blame upon yourself: And fo faying, away he went to Market.

eli-

tty

nty

m-

ır-

he

or

1-

r

t

CHAP. III.

The Conclusion of the present Tale; which ends very much to the Honour and Interest of the renown'd Mrs. Polecat.

HEN the Guefts were all come, according to their Promise; Dinner was instantly order'd up: But perhaps contrary to their Expectation, not one of the bespoke Dishes appear'd in the first Course: Upon which, the Gentlemen all to a Man (as though by Confent; as, indeed, we do suppose it was) absolutely refused to taste of any Part of it. a good deal furprized both our Statesman and his Wife: But the former, much more than the latter. However, he did not think proper to begin a Debate about the first Course; hoping that the second would make them some Amends: But, on the other Hand, as several of those promised Dishes, according to the Rules of Custom and Propriety, ought to have made their Appearance in the first Course, and did not; fo they all began to doubt, that the fecond would ferve them the fame Sauce. Therefore they all began to fimper and wink, and laugh at each other, a good deal pleafed with the Prospect of a general Disappointment. But when

LAH

C

R

o D

y

i

1

when the fecond Course was also ferved up and agreeable to their Suspicion, not one o the Dishes he had ordered, came upon Table Mr. Polecat began to flare, and filling pretty uddenly with Choler, at this Repugnance to his absolute and frict Commands; he with a very fevere Accent, and contracted Brow, demanded of his beloved Lady (who fat at the Head of the Table as composed as any Philofopher in the whole Island) What there was else for Dinner? And being answer'd, that all, except the Defert, was then upon the Table; he flew into a most furious Passion (and which they fay, he was very apt to do in the Senate-House) G-d D-e Madam! said he sin the Puppet Language) What is the Meaning of this? Why was not the Dinner provided. which I order'd ?

Lord, my Dear, replied Madam (not the least discomposed about it) What is the Matter with this Dinner? I know nothing of your Orders, not I! what d'ye tell me of your Orders?—Don't you, Madam? return'd he, I shall soon know that (when looking at one of the Servants, that was waiting at Table) Here, said he, order the Cook to come to me, this Instant:

—The Servant obeys, and up came the Cook directly. As soon as he entered the Room, his Master demanded, in a very great Passion, the

Reason he was not obey'd in his Orders about Dinner.—Why, Sir, replied the Cook, if your Honour will be so good as to hear me speak, you shall know the whole History in a very sew Words.—Upon this, the Guests all cry'd out, in a particular Phrase, bear him! hear him! At which, Mr. Polecat said to his Cook, Go on.—And which he did, in the following Manner:

And't please your Honour, when I had received your Orders this Morning about Dinner, and was just setting out to Market, for that Purpose; Mrs. Pandora, my Lady's good Housekeeper, came into the Kitchen, and said to me, with her usual indisputable Accent, Here Cook! you must go to Market and provide these Things for Dinner, directly.—I answer'd, My Master, Madam, sent for me just now, and hath given me another Bill of Fare, here it is; with strict Orders to send it to Table as he has directed it.—

She immediately reply'd,—What have you to do with your Master? you must mind my Lady! What! shall he trouble his Head with Gooking, I wonder! Let him mind his public Affairs; not meddle with my Lady's Business. Household Affairs are no Part of his Province, and therefore do you as I order you.—With all my Heart Madam, returned I,'I cannot

help it; and therefore, you must answer it. 'Tis plain that I can please but one of them in this Dinner. And it is no Fault of mine. And fo, Sir, I went to Market and provided as the order'd me: For I knew very well, that if I had not catered as she had commanded me, I should have been sent back again, and not have been fuffered to drefs any other. And therefore, Sir, my Lady must account for this Breach of your Commandment. And fince your Honour has given me Leave to fpeak thus far; I humbly crave the Indulgence of a Word or two farther, left I should never be admitted to the like Opportunity. fits my Lady, Sir, if I speak more or less than Truth, let her Ladyship's Vengeance reward me.

Sirrah! you impudent Scoundrel! answered Mrs. Polecat, if you dare to mention me or my Affairs, I'll throw a Knife at your Head, you infolent Rascal you! - Here she took up a Knife from her Plate, that Moment, but was immediately difarmed by her next Friend, for fear of any evil Confequence: And they all again called out (as before) hear him! hear him!-Here Mr. Polecat ordered the Cook to proceed: and which he did, as follows.

Sir, it is true, you have the Credit of keeping me for your Cook (that is of keeping a Man-Cook)

but

but I have not the Honour of having you for a Master: And the present Affair is a pretty plain Proof of it; besides, Sir, I have in your House, only the Name of a Cook; without the necessary Appurtenances of my Office; for my Power and Liberty, as a Cook, are fo abridged and circumscribed, by my Lady, and that good Creature, Mrs. Pandora, that I can neither make Use of a Dust of Flour, or an Ounce of Butter, or a fingle Egg, for the Service of either Spit, Pot, or Oven; without first soliciting Mrs. Pandora for them. And did you but conceive, Sir, what Injury this does you, (and Numbers of other the like Cafes, in the Management of your Family-Affairs) I mean in the Eye of the World; you would be a little furprized at it. The Reward of this known Truth, Sir, I expect will be my Lady's fudden Discharge of me: And it is, Sir, the highest Favour (together with the full Wages that are due to me; which too, will be a knew Thing in the Generofity of my Lady) that I do ever wish, or desire, from her Ladyship's Hands.

Here, by Way of general Approbation, the Gentlemen gave the ingenious Cook a hearty Clap, to the no small Mortification of Mr. Polecat and his dear Spouse. The last of whom, all the while the Cook was telling his Tale, fwell'd

cal

an

do

fwell'd like one that was poisoned. But Mr. Polecat, to ease his aking Soul, and glut his Revenge, on those within his Reach; gave peremptory Orders, that Mrs. Pandora should be that Moment discharged. And the Cook, for his Ingenuity and blunt Truth, was also ferved the same Sauce, by his worthy Lady,

the same Day.

32/5

But all this while, the Honourable Guests had not fo much as tafted one Morfel of Dinner; and therefore, to shew their Approbation of Mrs. Polecat's unkind Conduct, by an unanimous Confent, they all adjourn'd to mend their Meal at a neighbouring Tavern; in fpight of all the Persuasion and Intreaty that could be used to the contrary: For being all very well pleafed with their Entertainment, at his Table, perhaps better than if they had partaken of their bespoken Dishes; they left their two hospitable Hosts, by themselves, to decide between them, that great undetermin'd Point, Supremacy! And which, I was told, after a very severe Struggle; and much Difficulty, was at length rendered up, by bim, to Madam; as her absolute Right of Conquest. And that the reigns to this very Day, Commander in chief, and Sole Lord of the Household: Moreover, that the first Thing she did, after her Power was re-established, was to recall

call from banishment, that most Admirable, and useful Favourite-Instrument, Mrs. Pandora.

CHAP. IV.

remotory Orders that Mis-

Containing some reasonable Conjectures of the Author's concerning the foregoing Story; and some other far-fetch'd Comments, which the Reader may construe as he pleases.

UR various Readers, we apprehend, are strangely divided in their numerous Opinions, concerning the Conclusion of the preceding History: Many of our married Male-Tyrants, are, doubtless, gnawing of their Lips, in downright Anger that the good Lady should. at length, finish her Business so happily; and perhaps are ready to pronounce the Solemnization of a Skimmington to commemorate the remarkable Period of fuch a shameful Overthrow. But, for the Fair-Sex, methinks I fee them smiling, with an inward Satisfaction, that the triumphant Mrs. Polecat had so heroically maintained that hereditary Dominion, which her powerful Sex can honeftly boaft a continual Succession of, since the first Woman was created.

But, as there is no Rule without an Exception: So may the following Story prove that Proverb good. And we may here take Notice, that, although in Sacred and Prophane History, their Accounts are sufficiently charged with Inflances of the Power and Dominion of that Inchanting Part of the Creation; and that the Damages which the rest of the World hath already fustain'd by their effectual Rule, will never be repaired; yet, I am apt to think, that if Sampson had had more Wit, and less Strength; and David more Humanity, and Honesty; with less Power (with an Hundred and Fifty Thoufand other similar Cases; many of which we may find much nearer to our own Neighbourhood) they would not have left behind them fuch reproachful Stains upon their Memories, as some People seem to think they have. And as it is recorded, in Holy-writ, that the Race is not always to the Swift; nor the Battle to the Strong, it is thereby understood, that Policy is better than Strength, and Deliberation more likely to succeed, than Precipitation. Both of which Sayings, were verified in two late remarkable Accidents within our own recent Eye-shot.

That the Battle is not always to the Strong, was fufficiently proved (not to mention that

Ch.

une

Da

our

of S

ViE

wh

rou

wh

figh

Su

un

En

the

an

fio

th

de

pe

€a

pr

fo

0

A

fr

unequal Engagement so long ago, between David and Goliah of Gath; but those nearer our own Knowledge) as in that famous Trial of Skill between that invincible Hero Mr. His Victor, and the Calf's-bead Champion. And where, also, the good old Proverb was barbarously knock'd, and bruis'd all to Pieces; which erroneously afferts, that every Cock can fight upon his own Dunghill.

And, that the Race is not always to the Swift, was evident enough by the Nimble and unfuccessful Gallopings of the Rebel-Army in England, in the Year 1746. When although they ran so swiftly round the King's Troops; and all about the Country; yet, in the Conclusion, they lost the Plate.

If any of our impatient Readers should take the least Umbrage that we have made this sudden, and perhaps unexpected Skip, from Puppet-Island to the Island of Great Britain; we can produce them very * lofty Examples, to prove, that it is extreamly natural for any Perfon to make a Visit to his Native Country, as often as an Opportunity shall conveniently arise. And therefore, we humbly hope, that this friendly Visitation will rather be look'd upon as

^{*} Mrs. Woffington's repeated Trips to IRELAND are very lively Instances.

return to our Author; and which is next, to shew the different Success, which constantly attends the Undertakings and Proceedings of those of intemperate Starts, and momentary Flashes; and those of a more deliberate, glowing, moderate, and lasting Heat. And which Proposition will be sufficiently exemplify'd by the satal Event of Mr. Polecat's Contest with his Victorious Sultana, already told; and that of the following, more temperate Forbearance in the Reception of it, as well as the punctual and timely Remembrance, to reward the Evil-offerings of a personal Indignity, from the Treasonable Wife of his Bosom.

CHAP. V.

Wherein the Captain introduces the Second Story, according to Promise.

AFTER I had been upon the Island about twenty Months, I contracted an Intimacy with a very creditable and worthy Gentleman, who was by Trade a Mercer. He was Master of a very compleat Fortune; and had for many Years before, been very happy in the State of Wedlock; but at this Time,

he

Ch.

he h

whe

as h

(wh

Qui

ano

Life

him

to

no

a V

Ap

de

ol

as ar

m

e

t

he had bury'd his first Wife, about two Years, when not finding himfelf fo thoroughly fatisfy'd, as he thought himself in his first Wife's Time (who was a Woman posses'd of every good Quality) he entertain'd a Defign of making another Election of an agreeable Partner for Life: And which good Hope, he foon thought himself secure in; for as he had Wealth enough to fupply him in all his necessary Defires, and no Child living; he chose for his second Mate. a very agreeable Young Lady, (to all outward Appearance) but with little or no Fortune. Indeed, there was some small Disparity of Age between them; she being about twenty Years old; and he about double that Number. as he was a very clean, agreeable, good-natur'd, and temperate Man; many of her Sex, and much her Betters, would doubtless have thought themselves very happy in her Place. And more especially, as he made it great Part of his Study to indulge her to the Height of her Defires. But as there are some fort of retrograde Tempers in the World, which the more is done to please them, the plainer the Proverb is cast before Swine; so did it appear here; for she began to shew her Husband her lofty Airs so early; that I, who was privy to the Match, and now intimate with them both, was hereby, the very next Day after, most aptly reminded

Ch

Ar

to

dis

gr

fai

fo

M

tu

m

al

t

I

n

t

C

1

1

of the following most slinging Sentance in Otway's Orthan:

When you would give all worldly Plagues a
Name

Worse than they have already, call them Wise!
But a new-mary'd Wise's a teeming Mischief,
Full of herself: Why, what a deal of Horror,
Has that poor Wretch to rome, that wedded
Yesterday!

His unhappy Propriety of the above Application to my good Friend Calmly's prefent Case (for so I shall here call him) we had very fudden Proofs of; for now, the more tender and indulgent he endeavoured to appear to her; the more refractory she was to him in Return. And this contrary Disposition, as we shall by and by find, did not proceed so much from the natural Inclination of her Temper; as from a long fuffer'd Want of Thought, by the Indulgence, or rather Encouragement of her Mother; who, being her darling Favourite, had fo accustom'd her to the absolute Command of the without the least Check or whole House; Controlement; that when she came to list into the Service of Matrimony, she assum'd the same Office of commanding over that Superior Power, which she had so solemnly promised to obey.

And

d

And this good Man's fond and easy Resignation to her unwarrantable Will and Proceedings, gave new Root and Nourishment to her undigested Folly: And so insensibly fast did it grow with her, that in a very short Time, she fail'd not to make several Assaults upon his Person; and Batteries too: Which the poor meek Man, frequently receiv'd with no harsher return, than a pitiful Smile and frequent Admonishments to the following Effect.

You furely imagine, my Dear, that I am an absolute passive and insensible Creature; and that, because I do not refent your ungrateful Usage, as most Men would do; that I shall never call you to a farther Account for it. 'Tis true, I should be much more pleased to fee you capable of timely correcting your ridiculous Errors, yourfelf; and that you would call your Proceedings unto an inward and strict Scruti-But I do affure you, that if no Motive of your own, nor my friendly Admonition, and Forbearance, can work no better an Issue than our present Prospect affords us; you may, as certain, as Heaven made you, if I live, expect a most bitter Acquittance. My Stock of Patience is wore and fretted to the very Ground; and I cannot much longer fuffer you with Impunity to gall, to fuch an injurious Degree, my Aching-Senfes. Remember, that I do affuredly

furedly promise you, a most sharp Sallad, to this your so luscious a Delight in the most foolish, and tyrannous Difaffection. And then, when the unfavoury Time of ballancing our long Reckoning is come; how grievous that Hour may be to you, you do not, I believe, conceive. I would therefore have you to make fome valuable Account of this Warning: And to well note, that your not immediately flopping the Impetuofity of your maligant Humour, is but a woful Protraction of the vengeful Fruit of that Evil-Day.

Such a wholesome Lesson of Advice would certainly, one should think, have opened the Eyes of any Human-understanding, sufficient to have caused an immediate Reformation of Manners: But how much our present Heroine profited by this Doctrine, shall be further shewn in the Contents of the next Chapter.

CHAP.

H

pat to

lefs me

far eri W

fti

W an

m di

> th W

V I

N tl

CHAP. VI.

How Mr. Calmly's Wife gave bim a dangerous Wound on bis Forehead; and the Manner he accounted with her for it, afterwards.

O this Effect, did the good easy-tempered Man continue to deal his gentle and patient Admonitions, for some Time. to so little Purpose was it heard by his regardless Wife, that one Day, having by some means unfortunately provoked her Anger too far; the immediately, to convince him of his erroneous Prefumption; in the midst of her Wrath, catch'd hold of a large Brass-candleflick, and fending it at him, with all the Goodwill and Force imaginable; it cut a most horrid and miferable Gash in his Forehead: Infomuch, that he was, for some Time, render'd disposses'd of his Senses; so that he fell to the Ground. This Accident, indeed, fomewhat alarm'd her for the prefent; a Surgeon was immediately fent for; and it was fix Weeks ere he was thoroughly recovered of it During all which Time, he never open'd his Mouth against her, in worse Terms than these: My Dear, you shall one Day certainly VOL. III. M [mart finart for this: I have many Times, promifed you a Sallad; and I will most assuredly, gather it for you the very first convenient Opportunity.

This Sallad had indeed been mentioned many. Times before; but as it was a Dish she had never yet tasted of; nor yet understood; she made as little Account of any Apprehension of its Nature and Relish; as she did of the Time in which it was to be gather'd.

But the Spring of the Year being now wasted, he thought it a very proper Season to make one Campaign; and if possible, to come to a decisive Battle for the *Imperial-Dignity*: So that being now, by his double Diligence, a little in Favour with this powerful Amazon; and taking the Opportunity of one of her best Humours; he ventured to solicit the following Favour.

My Dear, said he, it is now excessive fine Weather, and exceeding pleasant in the Fields; so that, if it be agreeable to you, and the Weather should hold good till Sunday; we'll take an early, Rural-walk, a Mile or two from Town. It will administer both a Pleasure and a Profit, by the Strengthening of our Health—With all myHeart, returned she—Accordingly, when Sunday came, about six o'Clock in the Morning, into the Fields they went very lovingly

ingly together. When they had walk'd about a Mile and a Half from the Town, they came to a pleafant Wood; where, at this Time of the Year, great Numbers of People generally reforted for the Pleasure of a Sylvan-Amusement. And here, they agreed to walk through it, in order to gather some Spring-Flowers, of which there was great Plenty: But when they were come to about the Middle of it, unheeded by her, he took a Knife out of his Pocket, which he had carry'd with him for that Purpose; and cut a Couple of good Tough-Sticks. about the Bigness of a Man's Thumb; and bringing them to his Fair and Warlike-Wife, defired her to take her Choice of them. At which, she seem'd surprised .- Lord! said she, what do you mean, my Dear? What should I do with them? Why, Madam, reply'd her Husband, I mean here, before we part, to dispute, in personal Opposition with you, the Right of Sovereignty; and which, in my Opinion, you have too long and most tyrannically usurp'd: For I do not only find, by the Holy Scriptures; but am also inform'd by the Laws of Nature; as well as by those of my own Country; that Man was originally created for, and at first design'd to be the fuperior and governing Sex. And therefore, as I have to my great Shame, fo long offend-M 2 cd

ed the Laws of God and Man, by fuffering you to reign in that Defpotic Manner you have; I am fully determin'd, never to return Home, till we have totally! absolutely! and definitively decided that great Point. And as you have hitherto, Madam, appear'd fo great in Arms; I will now, before we depart this Spot, put your Prowess to the Proof. Here are two equal Weapons, do you take one of them; which you please; and if you can fairly conquer me by the Wag of Arms; why then, Madam, from this bleffed Hour, I'll be on all Occasions, your very faithful Subject; and as fully obedient to your future Will; as on the contrary, I shall then expect, from vou to me.

This fudden Proposal of a War, greatly astonish'd the good Lady; insomuch, that, she could scarcely believe her own Eyes and Ears: And perhaps would have been very glad to have found them, at this Time, particularly fallible. But, on a Moment's Resection, there was little room to doubt; for by his grave Appearance, the Privacy of the Places the Novelty of his Proceedings; and her own Recollection of his former composed Promises; that he would some Time or other most certainly give her a Sallad (as he call'd it) she could not now help fearing but that the sad

Hour of Appointment and Account, which he had prophefy'd of, was at last, come to pass. And notwithstanding her late boisferous Behaviour, she would now have fain avoided coming to an Engagement, if possible: So thatwhen he again press'd her to chuse her Cudgel, and prepare for an Onfet; she would willingly have put up the Affront: And have cancell'd all pass'd Trespasses, on either Side, with all her Heart. But this could not be granted; for on her refusing to take hold of one of the aforementioned Weapons; he prefented her with a very fevere Stroke, cross the Shoulders; with this farcastical Reproof-Why, Madam, you have often ere now, made me fufficiently fenfible of your Magnanimity and Valour at Home; fo that I am confident you can behave yourfelf as courageously as any Heroine in Chriftendom, if you please. What can so wonderfully have dampt your Noble Spirits now, when a Point of fo high a Consequence, is in immediate Dispute? What can so suddenly deprive you of that laudable Bravery, which hath, hitherto maintain'd you in that most illustrious and superior Dominion over me? for shame! my Dear! assume your wonted Courage; and fupport the Honour you have fo long upheld.

M 3

To

To this, fhe could only beg of him to forget, and forgive all her former Follies; and that, as a Token of her fincere Repentance, the would make a Vow, never to be guilty of any fuch like again .-- Ay, Madam, faid he, all this may be true; but I must here inform you, that, I refolved before I came out, abfolutely. to prevent any future Disputes between us, on that Head, by this Day's total and most effectual Decision. And therefore, Madam, all Arguments to the contrary are now vain; either take one of these two Sticks, and try your Prowefs, or I shall instantly treat you as I have before promifed you: And by this Proceeding, we shall foon see how sufficiently your mighty Skill and terrible Power is grounded. It hath indeed ever been accounted scandalous and unworthy for a Man to frike a Woman; and that Opinion I have hitherto maintain'd; and which hath always suffer'd me to endure your ungracious Infults without the customary Return you might reasonably thereby expect. But this I must call a Challenge, and if you answer it not, as I require you; I shall make a severe Reprifal upon you for your former Abuses.

Here, this Discourse of my Calmly's not prevailing with her to accept of his honest Offering; he presently saluted her with two or three sharp Strokes upon the upper part of her Arms

Arms and Shoulders: This a little began to ffir her Spirits to Revenge; so that now, seeing it was just the same Thing, she hastily catching hold of one of the Cudgles, began to lay about her (or more properly speaking about him) with all the Fury she possibly could. But in fuch an awkard and unskilful Manner, did she maintain the Assault, that she foon became tired of the Combat. And then she renew'd a Truce, proposed a Cessation of Arms, and returned to her best Entreaties. But to very little Purpofe was all this urged; for he was ultimately determin'd, that, as he had now began with her, he would absolutely leave no part unfinish'd; but would really give her a Sallad, that to her latest Memory should ever remain fufficient. And therefore shutting close his Ears against all her Proposals, Complaints, and Entreaties; he kept threshing away about her Arms and Shoulders, till she at length, being thereby four'd to it, by fore Pain, renew'd the Fight on her Side: But alas! it continued not long, ere she was reduc'd to beg again for Quarter: But which was not yet, nor could be granted, till many heavy Stripes were yet bestowed on his Part; and many Vows, and submissive Offerings, were exchang'd from her. in way I wall hoof

there are to depend 4

At length, all Hostilities ceased; and Victory being indisputably declared on the Husband's Side; he harangued his vanquish'd Wife to the following Effect:

Now, Madam, for the fruitful Pains I have here taken with you, this Day, you may have Caufe hereafter (if you think justly of it, and as you ought) every Time you reflect upon it, to account me, not only the best of Husbands; but also, the very best of Friends: For, I must here remind you, that, as far as I was able to perceive; you were in a very fair Way of being ruin'd both in Soul and Body. And though the last Mark I receiv'd of your unmerited Bounty, did not prove finally fatal; yet, I am not to acknowledge any Thanks to you on that Head: And the next might possibly have done the Business for us both. I, Madam, through the ungovernable Violence of your rash! infolent Behaviour! might have been kill'd; you must have died for the Murder, and your precious Soul, thereby, would have flood in a most dreadful Peril of everlasting Punishment. And otherwise, had I resented your Misbehaviour, as Thousands of Husbands would have done; what must then have been the Consequence? Only a farther, and Publick-Exposition of our Ill-conduct, on both Sides. I was, therefore, in hopes that the bloody Effect of your ungrate-

ful

fu

W

co

da

y

T

V

6

W

it

y

11

ful and desperate Dealing would have so wrought upon you, that you would by a Selfexamination have found your Failings, and become a new Woman; but I forrowfully, Madam, found myself mistaken in you; and that you rather gave way to, and encouraged your Turbulence, than endeavour'd to curb it. Which oblig'd me, forcibly, to that difagreeable Resolution I have now executed. well affured, Madam, (think not lightly of it!) that if ever you should attempt to lift your Hand against me more, though I may not, just at that Time, refent it, as some Men would do; yet the Time will certainly come wherein I will make that very Action grievous to you. Now, Madam, by the present Step I have taken, nobody, fave yourfelf, is any way the wifer for what hath this Morning pafs'd between So that, if you make a proper Ufe of this Caution, and my past Proceeding (which I both had in View, and very much at Heart) it may. without exposing either of us to the licentious World, turn to our mutual and future Benefit, But, if you have not good Sense, and Grace enough, to follow my good Advice; you may use your own Discretion. But remember, Madam, that I once more repeat my folemn Promises, if ever you dare to lift your Hand against

M 5

me more, (in Anger I mean) it shall, one Day, most certainly create you Sorrow.

This Discourse of Mr. Calmly's, together with the above Stripes, had its defired Effect, for his Wife being thoroughly convinced of her former Errors, immediately ask'd his Pardon for all that was past; and declaring also her free Forgiveness of all he had now acted towards her, the added a most folemn Protestation never to offend him, willingly, again. So that after embracing one another with mutual Forgiveness and Reconciliation; they return'd home, much better Friends than when they came there. And I can affure my Readers, that she has been so very ingenuous, several Times fince, as to acknowledge to me and many other of her Friends and particular Acquaintance, that this was the best and most wholesome Sallad that ever she tasted in her Life. Charion, and any out Proceeding

here it floorly to occur your bas , worly it beat

Wester turn to my mound but but a Benefit

ale your dyna Dalesta op and the trade of the Mark dans, that I once more repeat my ablent 196mille all over you date to the year that days

CHAP.

de less b. W. es. W. d'ass al

CHAP. VII.

A Kind of digressional Glossary.

As the World in general is always fevere and licentious in their Dealing towards others; we may naturally suppose that many of our gentle Readers are here ready to fall upon our poor Friend Calmly, Tooth and Nail, according to Custom, for his barbarous Proceedings (as they will doubtless term it) towards his Wise, in the last Chapter. We think it therefore, our Duty to endeavour, in Time to abate in some Degree their too much contracted Prejudice, by lending them a better Key, than they may perhaps already have found, to open to them a juster Insight into this nice Point, which they may very probably, hitherto, have wrongly conceived.

It is not to be questioned, but that which our Philosopher above hath called a Sallad, Numbers of rash People would term a Threshing; and so, by proceeding in their Error, might at length infinuate (nay, and perhaps report it so abroad, too) that he had beat his Wise! Whereas, by a thorough Examination of the Matter, it will very plainly appear to be no such thing.

For

X

2.5

For a Man to beat his Wife, we do confess, is a Thing so cruel! and so abominably gross! that no Woman can think of it with Pleasure; nor Man with Applause. And therefore, we would not even imagine that ever there was such a Crime committed since the Beginning of the World! no, not even, though we had seen it a thousand and a thousand Times, with our own Eyes. And much less record such a vile and unwarrantable Example in a Work which we have so well intended for the public Good.

A mild and cool Forbearance under the highest Provocation, is, we may observe not only a Christian Virtue, but also the noblest Proof of manly Greatness; as for Example: That mighty Hero Hercules, after he had deftroy'd all the Bulls, and Bears, and Serpents, and Lions, and huge Giants, and frightful Hydras, that come in his Way; yet, he thought it no Scandal to facrifice his whole Stock of Abilities, in a ready Submission, since it would please Madam, to fit down and spin; or, to wash his Wife's Difhes: And many a modern Admiral, General, and good Bear-Garden Boxer, who have play'd the very Devil with their Enemies in Battle, have nevertheless sneak'd off with a Broken-Head, from their own Wives, without the least Stain or Disgrace to their Honour.

By this Argument, we can perceive that all our Female Readers are fully convinced that the fly and politic Mr. Calmly ought not to have dared to lift his presumptuous Hand against the fair Idol of his Heart. But that he should rather have fought still to bear with her sprightly Temper, and patiently submitted to all her Decrees.—But perhaps they may a little mistake that Point too .-

And, although Numbers of foolish Authors have endeavour'd to shew the World that for Hufbands to beat their stubborn and unt'ward Wives, hath been the Practice of many Ages; yet we can, by no means, approve of those ill-manner'd Scenes, fuch as in the Mock Doctor, the Taming of the Shrew, the Devil to Pay. &c. &c.

Because, were it either manly, or justifiable, or even requifite for Husbands to beat their Wives (though for capital Crimes, only) the Consequence would be too horrible to think on.

Let us, therefore, turn our Eyes towards 70h, who is faid to have but a very indifferent Wife, and learn of him Forbearance, and Temperance, &c. And after we have a little reflected on his Chriftian-like Patience, which fairly confounded the very Devil himself, then let us honestly state, and truly consider the real Case; which will

will thereby flew us the absolute Necessity for our good Friend Calmly's Proceeding, as we have shewn it, above. And which we apprehend will prefently appear in a quite different Light, to what many of our impatient Readers may have already conceived. For,

It is generally supposed, that when a Man is himself the first Aggressor, by insisting upon either unreasonable or unlawful Things from his Wife; or, that by her retaining a more than ordinary Affection for a private Dram-bottle, or immoderate Love of Play; or imprudent Actions of Gallantry (Things which, in Puppet-Island, are very greatly in Esteem) or any other darling Vice-I had liked to have faid-but unwarrantable Passions, I mean; wherein the Refult is, that the repeated Provocations abfolutely produce a Breach of Peace between them, infomuch that the Confequence is Blows; that in fuch Cafe, it is commonly understood that a Man beats his Wife-I mean, if he should happen to strike the first Blow, and come off Conqueror. But this is not the Case with our Friend, in the last Chapter: No! quite otherwife! This was an honourable and warlike Difpute between them, concerning the highest Matter of Right! and of no less Consequence than that of Sovereignty itself. A Point of fo high

high a Nature, that every Nation in the whole World have many Times spent their best Blood and Treasure, in attempting such Decifions; and if it may be thought a Crime, in any one Man, to call forth his own lawful Wife, to a noble and brave Dispute, by Wage of Arms, for that high Perogative which she, contrary to the Laws of God and Man, hath tyrannically usurped; what shall we fay of a great and polite Prince, who shall take upon him to cudgel his Neighbour's Wife, without the leaft Abuse, or Provocation given, for his so doing? This verifies the old Proverb with a Witness. viz. That one Man may fafer steal a Horse, than another look over the Hedge. The French K-fhall, with more Honour, draw his Sword, and shew his fencing Airs, upon his dear Friend's Wife, or Daughter; than Puppet Calmly shall handle a little Stick in the Preservation of his Sovereign-Right, and the Safety of his own Brains. Strange Partiality! But to proceed:

It is no new Thing, when contending Parties cannot otherwise adjust their Differences, that they immediately have Recourse to Arms: And that this Proceeding is not only confined to Sovereign Princes, and other great States, we may easily learn from the loud Reports of Broughton's

H

CI

k

fi

Ĉ

0

1

Broughton's Amphitheatre; the vast Number of Duels that are fought, and the many Batteries that are daily carried into Westminster-Where the filly Combatants are again fo bruifed and battered by the Jerks and Querks of the Tongue-pad Bruises, that their Heirs and Executors many Times, feel their Falls and Bruises and hard Squeezes, several Years after they are dead and buried.

CHAP. VIII.

The Captain is alarmed with a Suspicion of Thieves in bis own House.

NE Night, after I had been about an Hour in Bed, I was fuddenly diffurbed by a kind of Knocking and Hammering; but tho' it founded as if it were at fome Distance. yet, methought, it was still in some Part of my own House; upon which, I began to ruminate within myfelf what it might probably be: And I could not lay my Eyes again to Sleep for confiderable Time; I was fo much alarm'd by it. Sometimes I fancied that some Villains were attempting to break in; and by and by, I as much suspected the Fidelity of my own Servants: For in the first Place, the Walls of my House

House were extreamly thick and strong, and my Doors and Windows were all as well fecured with Locks, Bolts and Bars. So that I knew not how, with the most Likelihood, fix my Jealoufy: However, the Noise still continuing, I got gently out of my Bed, and opening a Drawer, I brought thence two Brace of loaded Piftols, which I always kept ready in good Order, and put them with my naked Sword on a Table by the Bedfide. thought I, you may begin the Attack as foon as you please, the unexpected Reception I shall here give you in the Dark (for I had no kind of Light) will perhaps, not only be according to your Merit, but may also prevent any future Attempt towards me of the like kind.

In this Posture of Desence I lay many Hours, for I well knew that they could not possibly make an Incursion into my Bedchamber before I should be ready for them; and if it should be any of my own Servants, that were upon a bad Design, I thought myself most secure where I was; and that it might be more dangerous to attempt any Sally till Daylight; because it was to be fear'd, that there might be some one, or more, placed ready in Ambush to receive me, in Case of such a Motion. And

if they fhould be common Thieves, I thought my own Servants might probably yet detect them: Or, at worst, they could come at nothing of any great Value, except they could arrive within the same Room wherein I lay, for here were deposited all my precious Matters that were of easy Conveyance.

In brief, I never closed my Eyes all Night, and in the Morning, I resolved not to take the least Notice to any of my Servants of what I had heard, until I had made some Search concerning the Cause of my Suspicions. Accordingly, I made a fecret Survey of the exterior Part of my whole House; and at last, I obferved in the Garden, several Boards, &c. rear'd up against the Wallof my grand Parlour. This I observed with the utmost Attention; for it exactly corresponded with that Part of the House, from whence I thought the above Noise proceeded. But I held it not prudent to take any visible Notice of, what I now thought I had discovered; so that I carelessly walk'd to and fro, feveral Times, the whole Length of the Garden; casting a leering Eye at this Spot every time I came near the Place. At length the Gardener spy'd me, upon which he seem'd, purposely, to bend his Business towards me; and, as I imagined, a good deal confused. However,

Ch.

ever

no

Em

The

amı

my

Gar

my

he

Th

En

fee

the

no

W

pe

2

CC

g

D

ever, for feveral Reasons, I apparently took no Notice of any Suspicions, either of his Embarrassment, or of what I otherwise doubted. Therefore, as I was accustomed frequently to amuse myself with Reading, or penning down my Thoughts in the Garden, I called the Gardener to me, and ordered him to go tell my Valet to fend me a Book of Writing, which he would find some where in my Bedchamber. This was my Book of Notes, wrote English, that none of my Servants which might fee it, should understand it; and which, by the bye, I now very well knew they could not find. So that, as foon as the Gardener was out of Sight, I repaired to the Place fufpected; and was forced to move feveral Boards, a Door or two, and other Things, before I could come to the Depth of my Defire.

But having, at length, gained my Point, how great was my Surprize to find a Hale made in the Wall, which was built of strong Stone, almost through it, and near three Foot wide, every Way! In spight of all my Precaution, within myself, I was Siez'd with great Terror and Trembling; and must own that I was more alarmed at the Escape of this Danger, than any Thing I had ever before met with; wherefore, I made all the Expedition I could

Ch

wh

ret

TH

Ho

Ic

my

ed

all

an

ga

Manner as when I found them: And to prevent any Suspicion in the Gardener, of what I had done (for I had now fixed all my Apprehensions of Guilt on him) I hasted to the other End of the Garden as fast as I could. Where I impatiently waited his Return, and also endeavoured to the utmost of my Power to drive the Treason for the present, from my Thoughts, in Order to stiffe all Signs of this Discovery from his Observation.

Presently the Gardener returned, and found me bufily employed in pulling up fome Weeds. and piddling amongst the Flowers, &c. when, as I knew he must, he informed me, that my Man could not find the Book I had fent for; upon which, I cry'd out, in an angry Tone, Puh! the Fellow's a Fool! I'm fure it can't be out of the Room! But he never can find any Tning that is not immediately under his Eyes. And, fo faying, I went instantly out of the Garden, in quest of it myfelf; but though I pretended to be in fuch Want of the Book, it is easy to imagine that I had very little Use for it. However, I went directly into my Bedchamber, and having there pondered a few Minutes on what

X

ne

to

of all

ed

I

n,

37

ıt,

all

a-

d

5,

1,

y

y

n

e

I

f

what I should do in this perilous Affair, I returned again into the Garden, with the Book I had before sent for. Where I spent near an Hour in the greatest Misery, in Reading what I could neither see, nor confine any Part of my Thoughts about: For though I pretended to be musing in the Book, my Mind was all the Time employed on defending myself, and punishing those Russians who had thus began to besiege me.

CHAP. IX.

Shewing what whimfical Device the Captain put in Practice to prevent his House being robbed, &c.

A FTER I had reflected some Time on the Danger that threatened me, and also on the properest Means to avoid it, I concluded on the following Scheme; and which I thought no very ordinary Contrivance.

I was now in my Bedchamber studying to myself, when this Thought arose in my Mind, which having a little digested, I resolved without the least Delay to put in Execution. To which End, I sent immediately for a kind of Carpenter, that had before done me several little Jobbs,

Ch.

the

till

my

thir

Cha

hav

Mo

of

Ga

int

ria

on

pla

Bı

an

Jobbs, and whom I thought a very ingenious Fellow; when he came to me, I informed him that I had a whimfical Fancy came into my Head, which I had an Inclination to put in Practice: That he must directly go to Work and finish my Plan, and be fure not to open his Mouth about it to any Person whatsoever, till I should give him Leave. The Fellow was faithful, and about feven o'Clock in the Evening of the same Day, he brought me what I had ordered, entirely to my Mind. This Device was a wooden Carriage made very strong, to hold a Blunderbuss fixed fast down upon an exact Level, about three Foot from the Ground, and fo to be fcrew'd to the Floor, or taken away at Pleasure; and by means of a small Pully which was fixed to the Blunderbuss, behind the Trigger, there was String fastened at one End to the Trigger, and being passed thro' the Pully, came forward underneath the Middle of the Carriage, and so to be fasten'd at the other End, in whatever Manner might be thought most convenient. This Engine was made to be put together, or taken to pieces, in half a Minute's Time, and being brought Home to me disjointed, none of my Servants, had they feen it in that Condition, could possibly guess at the Use of it. So that having seen it all fix'd fast together, I moved it into a Closet in the same Parlour where I intended

5

1

3

the Use and Proof of it; and there lock'd it up till I retired to my Chamber; when I loaded my Blunderbufs, which was very large, with thirty or forty small Balls, and a sufficient Charge of Powder for their Weight. And then having fixt it in the Carriage, I pointed the Mouth as exactly as I could toward the Center of the Breach which I had discover'd in the Garden, and which was almost pierced through into this Room; then I fcrew'd down the Carriage, and fasten'd the Line from the Trigger upon a full Stretch to a Leg of a Chair, which I placed right before the imagined Place of the Breach, about half a Yard from the Wainfcot; and then, having cock't the Blunderbufs. I double-lock'd the Doors, and left this Machine to act the rest by itself.

I fancy it almost needless to say, that I had this Day taken all the Care I could to secure every Thing of Value, within my own Apartment; because it is reasonable so to believe. And having there a good Fire, I now resolved to amuse myself with Scribbling my Thoughts, in order to keep me awake, and that I might be upon my Guard while I waited the Event of my impatient Expectation. I was now as well fortify'd as a Man could wish, having by me, two Brace of good Pistols, loaded; a small Blunderbuss charged with Balls and Slugs; and

of

A

th

n

a ffrong fharp Hanger in a Belt by my Side. Being thus arm'd without, I thought it highly necessary to be also a little fortify'd within. To which End, I likewise placed upon the Table with my Arms a Bottle of good Wine; with which, I sparingly affished my Spirits; for my continual Expectation, together with my Hopes, Fears and Anxieties, was very fatiguing. After I had thus waited, with my Eyes and Ears wide open for near three Hours, and not a Mouse stirring(when I was least thinking of fuch an Alarm) I was indeed roused by the suddenReport of my Blunderbus-Trap; which being a little unwarrantably disturbed, now opened her Mouth with fuch a fatal Roar, as put the whole House into the utmost Fright and Confusion. Some of my Servants imagin'd that I was affaffinated and kill'd in my Bed; others thought that I might perhaps have committed Suicide. But all those Imaginations vanish'd in a Minute, by hearing of my Bell, which I instantly rung with such a continued Fury, for half a Minute, as plainly convinced them all that I was yet alive at The Women were half out of their Wits with Fear, and the Men little better, by the same Cause. But this general Mood of Timidity lasted not long, for on my Steward's coming to the Door, I knowing of his Voice, open'd it to him, and demanded of him, If he knew

knew what Noise that was, so like the Discharge of a great Gun. He answer'd with great Aftonishment, in the Negative. I then defired that he would take one of my Pistols and a Candle in his Hand, and fee if all my Men-Servants were in the House, and to bring me immediate Word. He accordingly went. and returning in two Minutes, told me, that they were all of them in their own Apartments. and perfectly wild with Surprize and Fear; that he found them running about the Room in their Shirts, all aghast, like Men deprived of their Senses. But that his Appearance and Difcourse had so far recovered them, that he had left them a Light, and they were dreffing themfelves to wait my Commands in a Moment.

Poor Skildric, (for that was his Name) when he came into my Chamber, and obferv'd that I was drest; and also saw how my Table was furnish'd forth with Fire-Arms, he increased his Surprise to the highest Degree. And while he stood viewing and wondering at my Preparation, I as nearly was examining his Face, for the most intelligble Marks of his Guilt or Ignorance. But we scarcely had exchanged a Dozen Words with each other, before my other Servants (I mean the Men) came and knock't at my Door. When I had call'd them in, I demanded, Is either of them Vol. III.

Ch

poo

ly 1

Ch

fur

or

Eff

COL

to

the

wh

thi

the

no

m

fu

de

Ic

m

fer

had heard any Noise in the House of knocking or hammering, the Night before? When all of them affured me that they had, for two Nights running; and that the Maids had also I then ask'd them the Reason why they had not acquainted me therewith; upon which, they answer'd, that they had all held a Consultation about it that Day, and that they were at length, of Opinion that the House must certainly be haunted; and therefore, they thought it not proper to fay any Thing at all about it, but that all the Maids were determin'd to quit my Service. Because they had not only heard this Spirit, they faid, but had also seen strange Things in almost every Corner of the House; and in almost every Shape: But, that they always vanish'd as soon as they had just shewn themselves.

This Story made me smile, because I plainly faw that those strange Goblins were only the Effect of their distemper'd Imaginations, which arose from their hearing of the above Noise. And therefore I told them that if the House was haunted by any Evil Spirits, which I did not know but that it might, I had great Faith the Ghost was by this Time effectually laid; for that I had employ'd a very sufficient Officer for that Purpose, who I did verily believe had done his Duty; and in pure Compassion to the

poor

poor Women (who were half distill'd to Telly with their Fear) I fent my Steward to their Chamber Doors to comfort them; and to affure them that there was neither Fear, Harm, or Danger of any kind. This had the defired Effect, for it gave them such Spirits, that they could lie no longer in their Beds, but defired him to leave the lighted Candle at their Door; and they would all get up, they faid, in order to learn what might be the Cause of the Family being thus alarm'd. The Steward having answer'd their Request, he acquainted me with what had now past. And then I inform'd those about me of all that I had before discover'd; who I Suspected; and how I had acted. And, in order to either confirm, or to clear my Suspicion, I commanded them all to follow me, that they might be Testimonies of whatever might prefent itself, in our expected Result.

invo ast that traget at the great Paids

taou

for that Playoff, rainages to the relieve had some his Duny a snow your Clour align to the

that yllinds to the first old the first old to the control of the

Keeps.

CHAP. X.

Wherein the Reader will see the successful Consequences of the foregoing Project:

And may, if he pleases, find something to improve his own Genius.

T is impossible to describe the Surprise of my Servants, when I inform'd them of the Discovery I had made of the Breach in the Wall, and of the Method I had contrived to make the Burgler punish himself in the very Crifes of his Guilty-Proceeding: Which, by the Report of the Blunderbuss, we concluded must now be the Consequence; according to the Defign of my Plan. But if their Wonder was fo great here, it was perhaps somewhat increased when they came into the Parlour and found a Lufty-Ruffian weltering in his Blood and Brains in the very midst of the Breach. His Head and Shoulders were just advanced through, into the Room; in his Left Hand was a Candle and Lanthorn, the Light of which was yet burning: his Right Hand had hold of the Chair that fired the Blunderbuss; and upon the Floor underneath he had either dropt or put a Loaded-Piftol. But as he could not enter the Room until he had removed the Chair out of

ul

7 :

g

y

e

e

O

y

e

t

his Way; that necessary Motion gave him his Quietus. Which unexpected Salute, must also, consequently, so effectually alarm his Companions, if he had any with them, that they must absolutely be put to slight. Because, as they could have no Idea of this Mischine and the Room quite dark too, they might as well expect ten armed Men there as one.

At the Sight of the flain Fellow, it is bard to fay whether our Joy, or our Wonder was the greatest. And having withdrawn into another Room, I call'd a Council of War amongst us all, to confider in what Manner we should now proceed; I heard all of them give their Opinions first, by my own Request,; and then I gave them mine. One, was for dragging in the dead Body, and staying there to watch the Breach; another was for fallying out in quest of the rest of his Confederates; whom they did not doubt but to find somewhere about the Garden. Having heard all they had to offer, I now proceeded to deliver them my Thoughts. which was, that the flain Delinquent should remain where he was, and that we would recharge the Blunderbuss, and fasten the Hand of the Deceased to the Chair that had so good a Communication with the Blunderbufs. which Means the dead Carcafe would fland, or rather lie, a most excellent Centinel, to either N 3 keep

W

in

t

keep out, or punish his fellow Rogues, in cafe they should dare to make a second Attempt.

This Scheme, with the utmost Pleasure, was unanimously approved of; and accordingly put into immediate Execution. Which being done, we all withdrew, and the Maids being now, also risen, I arm'd all the Men, and order'd my Steward to give them a couple of Bottles of Wine to drink amongst them; and then to come himself and fit with me. Which being done, we fpent a very agreeable Interval of about two Hours together. During which Time we each converst with great Freedom; and I found Skildric a Gentleman of good Capacity and fine Understanding. At my Request, he gave me a brief Account of the greatest Part of his own Life; in which were many very entertaining Passages, that afforded me great Pleasure in the Relation. But which I have no Opportunity of afferting here; for in the very Height of our Conversation, we were again alarm'd by a fecond Signal from our Blunderbuss-Centinel: Which now, instead of frighting my Servants, rather inspired them with the utmost Joy and Spirit. My Steward and I immediately ran down Stairs as fast as we well could; but as expeditious as we were, before we could reach the Parlour Door, the rest of my Servants were all assembled there with

fe

as

e,

y,

of

0

d

1.

with the utmost Impatience. However, I having order'd them to illuminate a couple of Lanthorns immediately, I detach'd three of them to make a strict Search all round the House, while Skildric, the Maids, and myfelf went to examine the Breach in the Parlour: Where we found the poor dead Fellow, once more feverely pepper'd, by the, now involuntary, Motion of his Lifeless-hand. But while we were pondering, and furveying the Courfe, we were faluted by the fudden Excla mations of our Detach'd Scouts in the Garden. Who having beat a watchful Circuit round the House, until they came to the Breach, they there espy'd a Man leaning against the Wall, whom we heard them demand to furrender, or they would that Instant shoot him dead. Upon which, the wounded Fellow (for so he was) reply'd, that he was a dead Man already; and they might do what they pleased to him. Upon this Answer, they laid hold of him; and applying a Light to his Face, who should this Traytor prove, but the very Wretch I had the Day before fufpected, viz. the Gardner: And this Discovery was the Cause of that loud Shout we now heard from the Garden. However, it was not long before they bore him with them, a Prisoner, into the House; where, after I had order'd him

NA

a Glass of Wine to affift his Spirits, for he had lost much Blood, he made the following Confession:

of the designation of the second of the O, Sir! faid he to me, I cannot look upon your Face, nor upon the short Remains of Life before me, without the most dreadful and defponding Apprehensions! I have been the most regardless Wretch on Earth, of every Thing that might have been conducive both to my present and future Happiness! Curfed Gaming ! Vile destructive Gaming! hath been my Ruin. I was born, Sir, to a pretty comfortable Fortune: Had a fufficient Education; was indulged by my Parents; but, undone by Company! Oh my Head swims! I am going into everlasting Darkness !- I would inform your Highness of many Things that I must now omit. My Spirits grow faint! my Flesh grows chill! and my Stream of Life is just spent out. In Gaming, I have loft my all! my Fortune! my Credit! my whole Stock of Hope! my Creditors grew impatient! Property I had none! northe least Prospect of ever being again upon a Level, in the World.

This desperate Condition, my Lord, hath wrought, at length, upon my unguarded Moments, to take this fatal Step. There were two more as abandon'd as my self; and equally concern'd.

g

n

fe

ft

3 7 4

I find, is past all further Mischief. Your Servants have justly destroy'd him in the very Entrance of our Hope! and their faithful Vigilance hath also reduced me to very near the same Fate; by endeavouring to convey his Body thence, to prevent Discovery. The third, my Lord, is sled: And I verily believe, so exceedingly frighted at our satal Disappointment, that he will never more attempt to come near the House. But, who could discover to you our bad Designs, I cannot guess.—Oh theavens pardon me!—I go, I go!—Oh forgive me! thou all gracious.—

Here his Soul being quite weary of her guilty Prison, she wing'd her Flight from the bloody Portals of his gaping Wounds. For he had several Slugs and Balls quite through his Body. But, as much as I was rejoiced that my Scheme had so effectually succeeded; I must own that this last Scene very much affected me. And, his thus complaining, so feelingly, on the dreadful Malady of Gaming, is the Occasion of my speaking more particularly of that soul Contagion, in some suture Part of this my useful Journal.

The Report of this Night's Adventure, was the next Day talk'd on with as loud and general

an Approbation, as though I had overthrown a whole Army of Giants. And so many People of Condition, of both Sexes, came to wish me Joy of the Success of my Contrivance, and also to view it, that my House was quite full of them, the whole Day. And, being aware, that this would be the Consequence; I would not suffer the slain Fellow in the Breach to be remov'd from his Death-Bed: But to remain with his Hand still lash'd to the Chair; in the same Manner, as when he last fired the Blurderbus, and thereby slew the Gardner.

It is generally said, even to a Proverb (and in France, particularly) that Englishmen are not good at Invention; but, whatever the ingenious French may please to say of us, touching that. Point, I can assure my Countrymen, that not a Puppet of any Class who saw the Contrivance of my Blunderbuss-Trap, but what survey'd it with the utmost Admiration and Applause. Insomuch, that the Fame of my Ingenuity and Conduct, was even approv'd, and highly praised at Court. Where, to the Honour of my Country, I thereupon, receiv'd the Compliments of the most illustrious Persons.

a

le

lof

d

CHAP. XI. OHA HOMA

had being to moins man A ma

Gontaining a remarkable Instance of our Hero's Humanity, and which produced him a very serviceable Acquaintance for the future.

N ingenious Hibernian-Actor in England, fome Time ago, being abfent when his Business required him at the Theatre, very wifely observed that he could not be in two Places at once, unless he had been a Bird. I hope my Readers will readily allow me the Advantage of this witty Excuse; in that I cannot possibly continue with them my Per-Sonal Attendance, while I am at any Time, employed in relating to them the Historical-Contents of my Journal, wherein I have no Part. unless I was also an Irishman. And as I have fome Particulars of that kind yet to offer, I thall for the future, take care to blend them with fome little Account of my own Proceedings, while I yet remain on the Island of Puppets. But, as the greatest Part of my Time was constantly taken up, according to Covenant, in the Company and Commands of my fair Subscribers, it may be very requisite that I. T should acquaint my Readers how I came by the Intellgence of fuch profound Things as I have already discovered: For to deal plainly, I neither gathered them from my Female Correspondents, nor from my Friend Stardall; nor did they ever know I was in Possession of any fuch deep Secrets. For as fast as I acquired them, I immediately rendered it all into my English Journal. So that it was impossible that they should ever be discovered. And the worthy Person who furnish'd me with the chiefest Part thereof, hath once made his Appearance; and who afterwards became more particularly acquainted with me, by the following Accident:

Being one Day at a Public-Austion with feveral Persons of Distinction, there stood just behind us a grave well-looking Gentleman, who waited for some few Lots of Books which were specified in the Catalogue: When prefently there came into the Room a huge Brutish Fellow, who, by his Behaviour and Appearance did not feem much to frequent those polite Places; and after having cast about his cloudy Eyes in the ftricteft Search of some one. whom it was plain he thought fure to find there. he at length came eagerly up to this grave Gentleman I have just mention'd, and whispering in his Ear, at the same Time took him fomesomewhat rudely by the Arm; which the Gentleman frowning at, muttered fomething to the Fellow that we could not understand. However, alk the Eyes of the Company were immediately directed that Way; and I, perceiving what had paffed, and at the same Time, recollecting methought, some Features of the Gentleman's, Face, demanded in a very Emphatical-Tone, what was the Matter? When the Gentleman reply'd, with a very respectful Smile, why, Sir, to tell you the Truth, a very forry Accident hath happened, as I may fay; for I came here, my Lord, in Hopes to purchase a: pleafing and ufeful Book or two, but instead. of my buying Goods at an Auction, I find that I am myfelf bought. For this worthy and honourable Gentleman here, has knock'd me down at fifteen Pounds; which is much more Money than I am really worth: And as he is fure that nobody will bid more for me, he infifts upon it, he fays, to take me away with him, good or bad, as his certain Bargain.

The particular Manner in which the Gentleman expressed these Words, instantly brought to my Mind where I had before seen him: And which also advanced my Concern for him, therefore, I desired that he would explain himself.—Why, my Lord, said he, a short Tale might inform your Grace, that I was once in happier Circumstances; when my Credit was

fom ewhat

fomewhat more current and valuable than by fome Misfortunes in Life, it has lately been: And it was then that this creditable Purchase was made. I will not, my Lord, attempt to trouble you with Particulars, but the plain Matter of Truth, is, that I am arrested for the Sum I have mentioned; and indeed, I am too well acquainted with Misfortunes, and the general Ingratitude of the World, to be either greatly alarm'd thereby; or, to expect much Indulgence from my untimely Distressor.

Well, Sir, faid I to the Officer who had him in Charge, do you produce your Authority. for taking this Gentleman into your Custody; and then write him a Discharge, and I will pay you both the Debt and the Cost of this Action. At these Words, the Gentleman was cover'd in a Moment with Blushes; while the poor embarraffed Officer expressed as much of another kind of Confusion, and was rummaging of his Pockets for the Warrant. But by his Looks and Behaviour on this Occasion, it immediately occurred to me that he was very conscious to himself he could not find it. After he had made a thorough Search, and had dispossessed his Pockets of every Instrument they contain'd, which he over-hal'd into his Hat, as they passed in Review, he presently verified my Suspicion by a shifting and shuffling Confession, that .

that he had unfortunately loft it. At this palpable Fine Te, feveral of the Gentlemen present flew to the Door, and being greatly exasperated against the Fellow, they drew their Swords, fwore that he was an Impostor, and that they would make an Example of him. Accordingly, a Peace-Officer was instantly fent for to take Charge of him; and the poor mistaken Man now found himself in a strange Hobble: I could easily perceive in him a very great Confusion, and a kind of repentant Concern, and which indeed, wrought upon me a good deal to his Advantage. I reflected a little upon it, and supposed myself to be in his present Condition; Thought I, it is yet possible that this poor Fellow might have had a lawful Authority for what he has now done, and that he has really loft it, as he fays; and if fo, where is his Crime? But perhaps he may have a Partner near at Hand who has the very Instrument in his Possession which he should now have had. Those Things are frequent in England; and why not here? And if it be fo. he has indeed committed an Error, and probably a very great Trespass; but as those are an useful. though despicable Sort of People; yet, they ought not to be treated with Inhumanity. Let us not therefore construe it as a Crime of the

first Magnitude, but endeavour to come at the Truth. Here I demanded of the Man as follows :- Look you, Friend, it is evident that you have here committed a very unlawful and public Affault; and for which I apprehend that you are liable to a very fevere Penalty: However, if you shall think proper to unfold the whole Truth and Cause of this Error, I will take upon me to answer it to your no small Advantage. My Lord, returned the Man, I ask ten Thousand Pardons, and I am infinitely obliged to your Grace, but indeed the Truth of the Matter is, that I had forgotten to ask for the Warrant of my Fellow-Officer. who is now waiting in the Street for my Return . with the Instrument in his Pocket, that I own my Lord, I most certainly ought to have had' in mine-Well, Sir, returned I, as I was before willing and ready to discharge the Gentleman's Debt, fince we are all of usliable to err, fo I must now intreat of him to pardon you this Slip; and upon Condition that you instantly produce this Brother-Officer you have mentioned, with a legal Warrant in his Pocket for what you have done against him, I will yet discharge the Debt, and alfo the Coft.

At this Proposition, the affrighted Fellowbecame extreamly joyful; and with the Licence of the rest of the Company, in about

five Minutes Time he fulfilled my Request, and I immediately executed my Promife: When I received a most ample Contribution of Thanks from both Parties. And as foon as the Officer was gladly departed the Room, Is addressing myself to the Gentleman, flipt privately into his Hand five Pieces of Gold, the better to enable him to purchase those Books he came to bid forand at the same Time appointed him to come to my House next Morning at nine o'Clock, and to fend me in Word the Moment he was there. The Gentleman was punctual to the Time of my Apointment; and I having before made a near Observation of his particular Behaviour the first Time I saw him, which greatly excited my Curiofity, I now requested of him that he would favour me with the chief Passages of his History; which I could not but imagine would fufficiently answer my great Expectation. And which he began in the very fame Words and Manner as my Readers will find in the Contents of the next Chapter.

CHAP.

wallight in case month

way a way and the state of the state of the

CHAP. XII.

Wherein is related the moral and entertaining History of the ingenious Yawho Zenobrady.

TY Name is Zenobrady. I am, my Lord, I faidhe, the Son of a very rich Merchant of this City, who having acquired a very eminent Fortune by his fuccessful Industry, and after having bestow'd upon me a very liberal Education, took all the Care he possibly could to impress upon my youthful Mind, the strictest Notions of Honour, Industry, and Integrity. I was about twenty five Years of Age, when my Father having fallen under the Virulence of a very dreadful Fever found himfelf upon the Verge of Life; and calling me to him, he commanded me to fit down upon his Bed, by him, and take good Heed of what he was then going to deliver to me. He was greatly reduced by the Ferocity of his Distemper, and had scarceStrength enough to speak as he might be understood: But as my whole Soul was open to his Words, and kind Nature now exerted her utmost Force to his Assistance, his Speech, methought, became more and more powerful.-My Son, faid he, (fixing his languid Eyes with Tenderness upon me) remember that you now receive these last Admonitions from

from the Lips of a dying Father. Life is but an uncertain and blind Companion; fickle in her Tafte, her Temper, and all her Proceedings; let Reason and Prudence, therefore have the chief Direction in all your Undertakings. The World is a corrupt Compound of dangerous Treachery and Pollution. Take Notice, that if you are wife and virtuous, you will meet with little else from the Fools of Fashion and of Power, but Detraction and Contempt. But for all that, let no Motives moveyou to be otherwise. And above all Things endeavour to avoid the Court; where the Crocodiles and Vultures of the Land only affernble to fuck her best Blood. If you are a rich Fookand wantHonours, you must pay dearly for them; but your Ignorance will be no Bar to the Purchase: But if you haveOpulence andUnderstanding, they will endeavour all they can to. link you in their own Chain; to buy your Interest and corrupt your Honesty, by the Addition of Honours and Places, which perhaps will only be a Difgrace to you. Remember that all human Apellations, as Titles, Characters. &c. are in themselves, a most worthless ard. ridiculous Creation, except they are worn with the most distinguish'd Honour. And my Lord and mine As are two Animals, which are frequntly fo near a-kin, that it would puzzle a Philosopher

Philosopher, which to give the Preference to. And these are only Scandals to the high-sounding Titles which they bear. Providence hath bleft me with an Affluence of Fortune which I shall now refign to you, and with it I must leave a most strict Injunction that you hereafter prefer before all Earthly-things, first, the true Honour and Interest of your own Country in particular; and fecondly, that of all Mankind in general. Let the chief Employment of your Mind, your Time, and your Fortune be fpent. in an useful Improvement of your own Understanding. For true Wisdom will always teach you an equal; and a wholesome Temperance of Mind in every Occurernce of Life: Neither to blush, tremble, or rejoice, at either the Frowns or Smiles of the greatest Tyrants on Earth. Prosperity and Adversity will then have an equal Effect, and only Heaven itself, can shake the fleady Fabrick of your Soul. If Providence fhould fate you, by any Accident, to the Posfession of a Place of Trust, let your own private Interest be a Thought of Loathing to you. But if you find it gains the least Advance upon you, I charge you, on my Bleffing, to refign the Trust to the Occupation of an honester Man; or, otherwise, rather leave the Deadly-Sin to the ready Embrace of the first Knave that will accept it. Forget not that the short Space of Time.

Time, which Providence hath allotted you in this Life, is but like a Dream, and could it be spun to a thousand Times its utmost Length; yet, it must have an End. Therefore, every Hour you lose from the Improvement of your Understanding is an irretrievable Loss. Delight not in Ignorance, because it is the Mode; nor in Self-pride, nor in Oftenation, for they are Deadly-Sins. A King upon his Throne is but a Man, and a Beggar upon a Dunghill may be as worthy, and as honest a one. Proper Obfervations and Reflections, on the Fabrick and Mechanism of any Insect living, will turn to a far greater Account, than strutting in the gaudiest Robes. The Face of the Heavens, the Bowels of the Deep, and the Bosom of the Earth, may at all Times furnish forth sufficient Matter for Speculation to wean you of all Trifles and vicious Defires: And at the fame Time it will mount your Soul, insensibly, in the most elevated and pleasing Degree of Adoration, towards the Great ! the Glorious ! the most Mer-Ciful! and Incomprehensible Author of them all.—These, and many other Things of the like Caft, did my dear Father impress upon my forrowful Mind; and foon after, yielded up his immortal Part to that bleft Power who gave it; and left me, his rich and afflicted Heir.

Heir, to mourn the irreparable Loss of so wife and good a Parent.

After the Death of my Father, I committed every Word of his above Discourse to Writing, and that I might often refresh my Memory therewith, I deposited the Instrument so ready in my Closet, that I made it my nightly Custom to read it constantly over the last Thing I did before I went to Bed: So that in a very little Time it was as ftrongly impress'd in my Mind as possible. And by Degrees I found myself so ripe in their Use, that no human Title could create any other Effect on my Ear, than the most contemptible Discord; except where fuch Sounds were annex'd to the fair Report of really good or great; that is to fay, virtuous or learned. For indeed I have more Veneration for a Smith, a Carpenter or a Corncutter, than I have for the noblest Grandee in the Island, if he debase his Character by his ignoble Actions. Arts and Sciences are the chief Staple of every Commonwealth; and that Prince who most encourages them, does more Good to his Country, and Honour to his Creator, than he, who by fuccessful Slaughter, wins a Kingdom.

This Discourse of the Yawho's I must confels a good deal furprized me, and indeed I cannot but fay, fo much accorded with my

own

own Opinion, that I could not help prefumptuously thinking, but that he who knighted the great Isaac Newton, or Walter Raleigh, bestowed his Honours somewhat more worthily, than he, who did the same by _____, * &c. &c.

And, if I could in the least encourage any such a Thought in my Mind at present, I was much more confirmed in it hereaster, by the further Discourse of my new Friend, as my Readers may by and by see.

From this, my Lord, continued the Yawho, I proceeded to employ and encourage all Men of Genius. I contrived and affifted in many Schemes and Engines for public Utility, which feldom fail'd of meeting with private Difcouragement from those, whose Duty I thought it was in particular, to have publickly receiv'd and cherish'd them. And in this deceived Manner I went on for many Years, still deluded by false Hopes and Promises, that I should shortly fee my good Endeavours crown'd with that Encouragement which I thought they deferved; and also, by that Means, be reimburfed, at least, some Part of my incredible Expences. But, alas! my Lord, too late I found myself most fatally deceived. But in-

^{*} Any unworthy Knight whatever.

deed what conduced most to my Undoing, was my aiming at the Establishment of a public Academy; whereto I not only joined my own Subscription, but also expended much Money and Time in endeavouring, but in vain, to bring it to bear. What perhaps contributed most towards rendering all my Proposals abortive, was fome few Tracts which I published with an Intent to open the Eyes of the Public; and indeed with no other View but a most friendly Hope, that they might conduce as much to a virtuous Improvement of those who most needed them. And for which good Intention they rather treated me like an Enemy to my Country, than one who made it his chief Study to ferve and advance it. But for all this, my Lord, if by any Means I could gain the Knowledge of any Secret, whereby it would benefit the Public by its Exhibition, I never fail'd of the Communication.

CHAP. XIII.

Wherein the Yawho concludes his History, and how he was employ'd by the Captain.

THESE Motives, my Lord, continued the Yawho, had such a Weight with me, that I could not avoid sacrificing them to PubPublic Confideration; and indeed, my Lord. I might well call it Sacrifice; for I afterwards found myself in the same Condition of Daniel the Prophet, who was thrown into the Lion's Den for contemning of the two fashionable Idols of Power, the mighty Bel and the Dragon. So that after I had wasted my Time, spent my Fortune, and puzzled my Brains for the public Good; I only found myself persecuted and abufed for my Labour. But if any of my Plans had fucceeded, I had always another ready to offer; for, give me leave to fay, my Lord, I did not confine my general Notions or Study of Things, to Politics, only; but I was ready for any Scheme for the Good of my Country. Poetry, Painting, and all Branches of the Mathematics, but above all Things Mechanism was, and is, my chiefest and dear Delight. And in my Pursuit of that pleasing and useful Study, I happily hit on a Thought one Day, which I could not but imagine would be of the utmost Consequence to this Island; especially if we could but execute it, a continual Secret to the Rest of the World: And which was, my Lord, to raife, mechanically, an artificial Wind sufficient to fill the Sheets of the largest Vessel in the utmost Calm: Even to fuch a Degree as to force her Way, at leaft, three or four Miles in an Hour. And this was Vol. III.

Book IX.

to be effected by a kind of Bellows-Engines to be work'd below, in the fame Manner as the Chain-Pumps are, and their necessary Tubes to afcend with the Masts, and to be erected and unship'd at Pleasure, and in such aManner too, as not to admit of the least Inconvenience to any other Part or Business of the Ship or Crew-And this useful Engine, my Lord, would also have eased the Ship of all her noxious Air, at the fame Time as it was filling her Sails. I also compleated a Model of it, which in every Respect answer'd my first Design, except that of feeing it ferve my Country. By these Proceedings, my Lord, I have entirely reduced my Fortune; and I have poorly subsisted for some Time past, on the scanty Production of now and then a little Poetry; a kind of Writing which the Puppets, my Lord, are extremely fond of, although they despise the Authors of it. And it was for some few necessary Trisles, which I wanted in the Composition of this last Engine, that I contracted that Debt, from which your Lordship's Generosity freed me, Yesterday at the Auction.

The above History of the Yawho produced fo many Reflections in my Mind, that it would be extreamly difficult to deiscribe them. I as much condemn'd his Conduct as I admir'd his

Honesty

like

Honesty of Heart; and I was as forry for his Misfortunes, as I was glad that I had it in my Power to affift him. I therefore told him that I defired to entertain him as my Friend and Companion: And that, if he would affift me in the Compleating of a certain Machine I had in View, I would well reward him for his Trouble. And furthermore, as I had no Dependence on the Ministry, it would perhaps change their Opinion of him to his future Advantage, when they should observe that a Person of my Rank, though a Foreigner, had taken him into his particular Esteem and Friendthip. This Proposal, as he was a fingle Man, was ready and joyfully accepted; and now I gave him to understand, that the first and chief Employement I had, as yet, to effay his Ingenuity and Skill, was, an Improvement on the former Plan of my Wicker-Bark. For as it had so wonderfully preserved my Life in that Impersect-State, which I came thither in: I could not be persuaded within my own Mind. but that it might be so improved, as to answer every End that might be further wished, or required from it. And I never enter'd my Bed without dedicating my most serious Thoughts and Prayers for the Recovery of my own Country: And notwithstanding I lived

0 2

like a Prince; was receiv'd, complimented, and respected as a Prince; yet, my dear and ever-lovely Angelica was never an Hour together absent from my Thoughts. Therefore, that I might be the more worthy of her, and to put it as far out of the Power of Fortune as possible, to render us miserable, if ever we fhould happily meet, I always lived with as much Oeconomy, as I well could. My Equipage was plain and contracted, and my own Habiliments were fimilar thereto. I never fquander'd away my Money, avoidably, but in Acts of Charity; and these I had the highest Delight in. My manner of living gave great Satisfaction to the Puppets in general, but more especially to my Fair Subscribers; who never feemed once to repent of what they had done in my Behalf. Their Tables were constantly at my Command, and I was always complimented with Tickets to all publick Entertainments. So that with some other Methods I used to Advantage, I fairly put by, to the Value of two thousand pound English, Money, every Year that I stay'd on that Island. And had I not been most fensibly engaged to that Divine Creature above, and so often before mention'd, it might have been very indifferent to me, whether I had ever feen England any more, or not,

For I have fome Reason to believe that I might have topt my Fortune to the verySummit of my Defire, had I but inclined to have alter'd my Condition by Marriage. And had many an honest Hibernian but been in my Place, I leave my Readers to guess what fort of useful and modest Matter would have made up the Sum of their Journal.

The Puppets indeed have Shipping enough. but the Ministry at that Time could not often be prevail'd on to grant a requifite Convoy to protect their own Merchants; and therefore, I had no Room to hope for any Service from them: And as I could not propose to hire a Ship myself to carry me to any Part of Europe. I refolved to try what plaufible Improvements might be made in my Wicker-Boat. To this Purpose, I unfolded myself to the ingenious Yawho, Zenobrady; who very judiciously, with my little Affistance, in a fmall Time afterwards made the following Improvements.

In the first Place, we fashion'd to our Purpose a couple of Pieces of good stout able Timber, but made hallow, well plain'd and painted, and which parted in the Middle, at the Distance of about fix Feet, and met at the Point (aHead) like a Net-maker's Needle. These were made convenient for cutting the Water,

and fufficiently brac'd together with Iron, with Wood, and with Ropes; in such a Manner as to strengthen and affist each other. Abast, we commodiously contrived to ship a Rudder, and the Wicker-Part was first study'd and moudled to our Mind, before we got it made: And which we found could not be better done than by the same Plan as our original one. That is to fay, two well-made flout Baskets, of an oblong or oval Figure; and fo form'd as one of them just fit to receive the other. These were full eleven Feet long, four Feet high, and in the Middle, about seven feet wide in the Forepart of which, there was made a Conveniency to erect a Mast for a Sail, about twelve Feet high. These two Shells or Baskets, were well, strengthen'd at the Bottom in their Making, on purpose for their more secure Lashings and other Conveniencies, to the Timbers below. And they were also well woolded together, all. round, with good Pitch'd-lines. On the Starboard-fide, abaft, we contriv'd a Cabin-Bed; and, to counterballance it on the Larboard-fide, we made Lockers for Provisions, &c. and to make it the more comfortable, the sternmost Part of the Baskets were wrought to the Height of about feven Foot, and arch'd over o'top like: a Child's Cradle: And which was also cover'd: Requires alli

all round, as far as this kind of Cabin reach'd, with well-painted-Canvas. But what made it fill more agreeable was, that this Covering upon an Occasion, might be let to fall backwards, like the Head of a Chaife, and drawn up again at Pleafure: And in the Front we contrived a good warm strong Curtain to draw as we pleased; so that when it was compleat. it was as commodious and as convenient as fuch a Thing could well admit of; and might accommodate three or four Passengers very pret. tily; if they would but have been contented with Watch and Watch. For I could lie in my Bed and steer, ease or strain her Sheet; and draw my Curtain in Front, either close or open-So that, if Lightning or any other inclement. Weather attack'd me, I could manage my Conveniencies accordingly. And lastly, the. after Part of these Wicker-bounds was elevate ed at Bottom, upwards of a Foot higher than the Head; in order to render it less liable to receive Water; and also more ready to throw it. forwards; where there was sufficient Provision made for its immediate Evacuation.

This Machine was begun and finished in my Friend Stardall's Garden, because it was near to the Sea; and from whence, a Couple of Horses could draw it to a Launch with all its Requisites. CARLAIN CREENLAND

Requisites ready shipt, in ten Minutes Time, or back again to its Depository in very little more. However, when it was compleated, it made a very great Noise all over the Island; and vast Numbers of the Nobility and Gentry flocked thither to view it: And who gave it the Name of the Royal-English-Pleasureboat. For none of them imagined that I ever intended to undertake a Voyage in her, should I be Put to ever fo much Necessity. Nor did I indeed defire they should. But I was nevertheless very impatient to make one small Trial in her, and therefore, I thought it my Duty to offer the preference at least to those worthy Ladies who were my generous Subscribers; three of whom had Courage enough to accept of it; and the next Day being appointed for this curious Trip, my Friends, Stardall and Zenobrady, gave us their Company; fo that we were just half a Dozen in her the first Etfay, and it happening to be a very fine Day, Thousands of People assembled about us to fee us fet Sail; and Numbers of Boats attended us with Musick, and Streamers, and other Tokens of Admiration and Joy. crown all which, I had the inexpressible Pleafure of finding our whimfical Vessel to answer every Particular that we could possibly expect from

e

y

e

r

1

I

1

)

from it. So that, after about three Hours pleasant Sailing we all returned again in Safety.

CHAP. XIV.

Being a long and occasional Digression; but a very short Chapter. And the last of this Volume.

S my next Chapter is to communicate to my Readers something touching the Laws, or rather, the Lawvers of Puppet-Island; I find my Pen already maligned with a contagious Taint of one of their most disagreeable and abusive Evils; as I imagine, by coming so near the Subject, viz. Tautology. For, I cannot here refrain taking Notice, as I may have done feveral Times before, that I am under too much Apprehenfion, that my Reader begins to be weary of spending so much of his Time on a strange Island: And that he would very willingly embark again with our Hero, for his native England. But I answer, that if he be not too much like most of our modern Travellers, who ramble into foreign Countries only to fpend their Money and Time, fhew their fine Airs and Shapes, and then return Home again rather greater Blockheads than they.

they went out; he must stay here a little longer and look more about him: For we have feveral Things yet to shew him, that he will do well to take good Notice of. I did indeed think, and took some Pains to qualify myfelf for that Task, to have given my Readers some pleasant Examples of the Execution of the Common, Civil, and Military-Laws of this Country; but I find, upon a little Reflection, that they would rather contribute to four than to fweeten him : And as the Study of the Law in England, is generally faid to be very dry and crabbed; fo we may bere add, that to have much Dealing with the Law, or with the Lawyers (which is the fame Thing) even here, you would find it much more crabbed still: And that before they had done with you, your Purse would be as dry and as empty, as the Infide of a Mifer's Head, or his Hand, or his Heart.

Another Thing which restrains me from purfuing my above Intention, is, that I am indispensably obliged to (perhaps) disturb my gentle Reader with an unavoidable Story or two, at the Close of this Work, on that Topic: And which we shall there present to them in regular Time and Place, as they actually happened to the Persons therein concerned. But

however,

however, as the Sole End of Writing and Printing was originally to entertain and improve the Public; I cannot but think I may venture to infert here feveral other Matters, as they are real Facts, without any Danger of displeasing a judicious Reader: For, is it reasonable to imagine, that any thinking Man could fpend almost four Years in a strange Country, which he had never before heard of, and not think it worthy his Trouble to note a thousand Observations in that Time? Or, how odd, fimple, and unnatural must it seem for a Person to fall accidentally upon fuch an Island, and just turn himself about, as it were, and come Home again? For, so must it appear to every Reader, if he should assign no Matter of Amusement to employ his Time and Faculties worthy of that Space. Mr. Fielding has fomewhere very justly demanded, of what Use any Particular Work may be, but to fay, or to shew good Things? So do I fay, that if we have good Things to shew, and for fear of offending fome certain Readers, we must be Obliged to omit them; then, the whole Use and Intention of that Work must absolutely be destroyed, in a kind of blind obedience to a Sort of People who are not worthy of the Sacrifice. Therefore . Therefore, on these and some other Considerations, I shall presume in the next Chapter, to begin a kind of Historical Adventure which I knew, myself, to be Fact; and which actually happened while I remained in the Island.

The End of the Third Volume.

